

wHaT tHe LoRd HaS dOnE wltH mE

by Victor Nicholas Hafichuk

A Theo-autobiography

PART SEVEN – Surprise Visitors to Day 888

Particle - Vision: Very Surprising Visitors

On January 23, 1998, 13 years after Dad was “[gathered](#) to his fathers,” and about 18 years after [Uncle Bill](#) (my surrogate father) passed on, Dad and his uncle came to me in a vision. I was at home alone. Dad was asking my forgiveness, and it seemed he was the spokesperson for Uncle asking the same. I readily gave it and asked if he and Uncle would forgive me for sins against them. He waved his hand at me as if to say (and he did say, in spirit), “You have nothing to be forgiven for! Forget it! No problem here!”

I told Dad I loved him and said to him, “Let your heart be warmed with the love of a son for which you longed in your life. Let all be made right. Dad, the Lord loves you, too. Now, rejoice, kick up your heels, and love the Lord with all your heart, soul, mind, and strength. Live in joy, not as the world over fleshly matters, but in the things of God.

“Love your neighbors and do them good - encourage them; help them. Let them know that your son lives, forgives you for everything, and loves you. No greater joy can a father have than to know the love of his son in all its strength and purity! Now you know that! Isn’t it wonderful, Dad? Serve the Lord in gladness.”

“Uncle, I take it that some things I said and our [late visits](#) bore some fruit after all! You too can enjoy life. Yes, it’s for you, too! Sorry for the evil I’ve done.”

“Dad, I’m really sorry for all the things I did to cause you pain and sorrow. I’m so sorry. I know you forgive me absolutely. What’s this? You say you’re the one who is sorry for what you’ve done to me and to everyone? Yes. And we forgive you, Dad. Those who know better and can forgive, do. Help your neighbors, Dad. Now you can do something positive for them and for me, too, and mostly for the Lord.”

“Uncle, I’m glad to hear there’s a stirring in you and that you respond; I can perceive it. Go on; it’s good; don’t be afraid.”

Rejoicing that they were forgiven, Dad and Uncle went, arms over shoulders, hopping and skipping down the road with joy. Dad had, in essence, said, “All’s well that end’s well.”

The world they were in seemed the same as this one, yet different. There seemed to be less physical gravity and more capability to do physical things we can’t easily do here. I was moved and thankful for that event. I had spoken many encouraging words to both of them, to love God and neighbor.

Was Dad glad or what! My forgiveness meant so much to him. That was why he came. What all these people need is forgiveness. I see that now. An anger left me that I didn't realize I had been carrying for a long time.

(As I edit this record years later, I realize their physical abilities, like running, hopping, and skipping with arms over one another's shoulders were a representation of their spiritual abilities and feelings. It didn't mean that the next world has less gravity or anything like that.)

Particle - Dialogue with the Dead... or Language with the Living?

I had never experienced anything like that before, where persons I once knew communicated with me from the next world, and I with them. There are those who would ignorantly condemn this experience as necromancy, but the question is: "Was this God-forbidden communication with the dead?" The Bible says:

"There shall not be found among you anyone who makes his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that uses divination, an observer of clouds, or a fortune-teller, or a witch, or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or one who calls to the dead" (Deuteronomy 18:10-11 MKJV).

Another translation has the second verse this way:

"Or anyone using secret force on people, or putting questions to a spirit, or having secret knowledge, or going to the dead for directions" (Deuteronomy 18:11 BBE).

Had I been calling to the dead or seeking their advice instead of looking to God? Had I enquired into things that didn't pertain to me or was I seeking the services of a medium or acting as one myself? I had no thought of communicating with anyone passed on; the persons came to me. Furthermore, they were asking forgiveness, sorry that they had sinned against me. I forgave them, and they made it known they forgave me.

Would devils do these things? One may say so, with the suspicion devils are there to deceive. How was I deceived for evil? I forgave, long-established anger left me, and I rejoiced in the Lord for cleansing me of bitterness I didn't realize I had. If those things were evil, and devils did them, we need more devils and should welcome them with open arms.

Absence of body doesn't determine the status of life and consciousness. I was dealing with the living, not the dead. Was not Uncle [reading the Bible](#) before he passed, rejoicing in what he was finding? Did I not [see Dad](#) immediately after he passed on, marveling at what God was doing with me? There was hope for righteousness with them, and God doesn't dash hopes for righteousness - never has; never will.

Because Dad and Uncle had appeared to me, I wondered about seeing and speaking to so many others who had passed on. As I thought of them, this is what I saw....

Particle - Vision: George Lynn Refused Entry into Heaven

A different kind of vision - more like an envisioning. I saw [George Lynn](#) at the gates of Heaven, trying to get in, but the gates were closed to him. He was insisting he was righteous, that he

believed the Lord and the Scriptures, and that only by faith in the blood of Christ could he enter, but they wouldn't let him in.

Some stood outside telling him to go away, rejecting him because, though he had right doctrine, he was trusting in his [own righteousness](#), not possessing the reality of Christ's righteousness. He was quite frustrated, perhaps somewhat indignant, but also confounded.

When he was alive, I tried to talk to him about the baptism in the Holy Spirit and the gifts. He wouldn't listen and was distressed, regretful that I, whom he had led to the Lord, was deluded.

Particle - George Lynn's Passing

I searched out and called George Lynn's widow in Red Deer to find out what had happened with him. She told me of George's passing. He died a very painful death of cancer. This could be expected, seeing George had operated a trailer manufacturing business and was constantly exposed to the chemicals and sawdust. When I knew him, he would wheeze when he breathed.

Mrs. Lynn told me that George's death was a great testimony to all those at the hospital because he took it without complaining or fear of death, constantly talking to everyone about their need for salvation. My question was: Why didn't the Lord heal him? "No good thing will He withhold from them that walk uprightly."

"If My people, who are called by My Name, shall humble themselves and pray, and seek My face, and turn from their wicked ways, then I will hear from Heaven and will forgive their sin and will heal their land" (2 Chronicles 7:14 MKJV).

Is God a liar, or were things not right with George?

Particle - Vision: David in Servile Work

Many years after my [brother David](#) had passed on, I saw him in a vision, working in what appeared to be a shipping place, putting boxes on a steel roller conveyor to be pushed along. He was happy, energetic, busy, and responsible, fulfilling his duties.

Particle - Vision: Nestor Rushinka Searching and Wondering

I perceived that after passing into the next world, [Nestor Rushinka](#) hadn't changed from the time he visited us at Thorndale Apartments in Dauphin. He was still in a fog, with skepticism and hardness. I couldn't talk with him; he wouldn't believe me even now.

Particle - Vision: Another Opportunity for the Twice Dead

Another vision: Through a doorway, I saw [Delores](#) sitting in a room with other people, having what seemed like a Bible study. She was mentally working on things, wondering and questioning, quite sober and intense about it. She realized she had missed the boat in this life and was determined to find out how or why, in order to try to correct herself.

Particle - Revelation, Not Imagination

With these four "visions," I thought that perhaps I was imagining things. I then asked the Lord about other departed people, hoping to get a glimpse of where or how they might be. I wasn't

given to see anybody else, and I couldn't use my imagination to do so. Therefore, I don't believe these things were imagination.

A reason I wondered if it was my imagination was because all these people seemed to be in circumstances and environments quite similar to those in this world. Truly, the next world is similar to this one in many ways, and in that world, there are many realms and many kinds of places, as there are here.

Particle - Familial Reconciliation

Very soon after these visions, I heard these words while taking a walk:

“First one must reconcile himself with his father and then he will be reconciled with his son.”

One hour later, Jonathan called from the farm. He wanted to come home and see me. This was highly unusual - like the moon dropping in the backyard. He was crying. He said he tried getting a ride with someone there who lived at Moon River, but the woman, Dagmar Kropek, our neighbor, said she needed to go shopping first. I said, “Go shopping with her if she will take you.”

“Thanks for the idea, Dad!” he exclaimed, ran out again, and succeeded. He was on the way home to see me!

Particle - The Harder I Try, the Harder I Am

I look back at how I have failed Jonathan. I wanted so much to do him good and to protect him, but I failed miserably.

It started with permitting the [Vitamin K shot](#) right after his birth. (Parents, don't do that to your children!) We tend to think that the medical world of doctors and nurses knows what it's doing. It doesn't. What's worse, pharmaceutical companies *do* know what they're doing, and it isn't good.

Then I let him [fall on the stairs](#), though I was warned he would fall. (Saints, believe Him when the Lord speaks in a still, small voice.) Jonathan looked like he was in full control. Appearances are deceptive; the Word of the Lord holds true.

Once I failed to safeguard him when he stuck his leg in a rope handle on our wood box. He fell over and twisted his leg. I still haven't forgotten the look on his face, as if to say, “Why did you let that happen, Dad?” He wasn't even two years old. I could see disillusionment grasping his soul concerning me at that moment. (Be watchful, caregivers; injuries can happen without warning.)

While at the playground at about age three, he was climbing a row of tires, hung side-by-side, ascending. At the platform at the top, there should have been one more tire to fill a gap. We both had our doubts, but I didn't do anything about it, and Jonathan fell to the ground, eight feet below. He cried; he didn't seem to be hurt, but it wasn't pleasant. (Pay attention to the doubts.)

We think playground designers know what they're doing. After all, there are children involved and perhaps even lawsuits to face. No matter. Experts, specialists, professionals, executives, and bureaucrats are all merely people, with ignorance, weaknesses, oversights, foolishness, inattentiveness, carelessness, irresponsibility, and yes, criminality.

The world isn't a perfect place, and those in it aren't to be trusted. I guess that's what Jonathan had to learn with me and I with him. It seems I had more disillusioning to experience than he. Who was I to think I could do things perfectly for him? None of us can ever take God's place of protection.

When he was about four, I put him in a wagon and let him go down the hill of the road. I should have known better. All it took was one false move on the handle, which he used to steer, and the wagon tipped, sending him to the pavement, incurring a bruise and scratch on his head. (Try to anticipate the possibilities and risks and take precautions.)

When he was about six or seven, I had him help me do some landscaping on a warm day, not paying attention to the heat or the sun. While I could go for hours without water, I didn't consider Jonathan's needs. He didn't say he was thirsty, didn't drink any water, and got sunstroke or overheated and fell quite ill, with high fever, for several days. I was wondering if we weren't going to lose him. (Pay close attention to the needs of others at all times.)

One day, we ate some melon that had been in the fridge for several days. He and I were sick from both ends for a day. (Waste is better than illness - toss it; better still, eat food while it's fresh.)

I had [idolized](#) Jonathan. As I look back, I believe the Lord wasn't pleased with my inordinate affection for him, and so I was oft confounded. We would see Jonathan continue to suffer for one or more of these incidents.

Particle - Why Dad and Uncle?

In discussing with Marilyn my encounter with Dad and Uncle Bill, I wondered out loud, "Why was Uncle with Dad? There could have been any number of people with him, like his son, David." Marilyn replied, "Both were your fathers." Surely! Uncle had been my surrogate father on and off for perhaps two years or more. I had to be reconciled with both, and they with me.

Particle - Archie and Cathie to Be Back

On January 23, 1998, I received that Archie and Cathie would be back. I knew that if that were to happen, they would be very different and there would be no doubt of their positions, motives, or attitudes, and unlike before, I would readily receive them with open arms. I had no bitterness for them, but I knew they had it for me.

Particle - Another Fast Appointed

Around this time, I was feeling that there needed to be time spent in prayer. On the morning of January 27, 1998, I knew Lois would have something to say to me. She called to tell me she received the night before that I was to fast for 10 days, and to be alone. Were these the 10 days to which Marilyn had [referred](#)? Was my time for departure from this world imminent?

As each day passed, I grew stronger in my belief that I would die physically. I recalled that Moses was taken alone. Was this part of my being "as Moses," according to [Marilyn's prophecy](#)? I didn't mind dying, or dying alone, at all.

I considered that if I started my fast this day, it would end on February 6th, **88 days** after Bob Gregson called me to tell me of his [dream](#) of the coming of the Lord and the reconciliation of the two persons. The number "8" signifies new things, a new creation.

The end of the fast would also be the 11th anniversary of my [vision](#) of the star hitting the earth. One could assume that the star would suffer damage, if not total destruction. In any event, if the star wasn't damaged or destroyed, its trajectory would be rather altered, wouldn't it? What awaited me? What would my condition and trajectory be?

Other timing coincidences: Going back from [Bob's dream](#) to the [last day](#) of my last fast, August 14, was **88 days**. Going forward from the last day of my last fast to the anniversary of Marilyn's prophecy was **40 days**. How could one put such dates together, with such significant events and so many factors apparently related?

Marilyn and Jonathan left with instructions not to call me. I would hear from nobody for 10 days. I decided to eliminate radio, TV, telephone, newspapers, and any profane or secular literature, as well as any other human contact for the full term.

Without planning such timing, I determined that from the day of Marilyn's prophecy of September 24, 1996 to January 27, 1998, the beginning of this fast, was **490 days**, or 7 X 70, and to the end of the fast, **500 days**, or 10 X 50. Jubilee in Scripture, which came every 50 years, was the day when debts were forgiven, and all things were released and restored. Fifty days after Christ's resurrection, His Spirit was given at Pentecost to indwell mankind. Jubilee was announced on the Day of Atonement, the tenth day of the seventh month, which on the Gentile calendar is **July 10th** (Leviticus 25:9-11).

The number "50" came to Marilyn, though she didn't know why. I found that from December 17, 1997, the day of the [prophecy](#) of the man that troubled us to February 6, 1998, the end of the fast, was **50 days**. It seemed that the prophecy had a double meaning, pertaining to some person, but also to the "man of sin," the carnal nature referred to by the apostle Paul in 2 Thessalonians chapter two.

A curious note: It likely means nothing; however, I heard, or thought I heard, on the radio, just before beginning the fast, "The next 10 days will be trying, decisive, and/or important for Bill Clinton and his presidency" (words to that effect). Did I hear right? How much of a coincidence is that? Let statisticians declare it.

My days would be 10, or 240 hours, or **14,400 minutes**! Fourteen thousand, four hundred **days** would be 40 years, a generation, 40 representing the end of flesh in Scripture. After 40 days, Jesus came out in power from the wilderness.

I was also reminded that to the church of Smyrna, Jesus said:

"Have no fear of the things which you will have to undergo: see, the Evil One will send some of you into prison, so that you may be put to the test; and you will have great trouble for ten days. Be true till death, and I will give you the crown of life" (Revelation 2:10 BBE).

I [noted](#) on December 28 that I had taken an important step to believing Marilyn's prophecy. From then to February 6, the end of the fast, was **40 days**.

Just before Marilyn and Jonathan left, Jonathan asked me a question, out of the blue: "Dad, what is half of seven?" The number 3½ has quite a significance in the Bible. Why did he ask that? Nobody

knows, including him. I don't recall if I had an answer. Did it signify unfinished business? The first half of the story or program? (Jonathan also wanted to stay with me.)

Particle - My Cursed Corruption

In the second day of my fast, I began to see my carnality. Where was the fruit of the Spirit in my life? Where were love, joy, longsuffering, peace, faith, meekness, and temperance? Whom did I love? Where was there ever a moment's joy? When was I ever patient? When did I experience peace? When was I ever gentle or good? **When did I ever believe?**

I was always worried, fearful, anxious, troubled, vexed, angry - so angry - frustrated, discontented, and inconsolable. I fought, argued, criticized, demanded, and condemned. Temperance? Look at my food, TV, and alcohol consumption (when there was any), greed in money, stinginess, sexual conduct, and covetousness.

I realized it was only blasphemy to say I had the fruit of the Spirit at any time. Therefore I had never received the Spirit. Oh, visions, revelations, prophecies, yes. So had Balaam, Saul, Caiaphas, and even Balaam's ass, true or false. **"Lord, Lord, we prophesied in Your Name and cast out devils"** ...and He answers, **"I don't know you; go away."**

In my [dream](#) of 1972, I was wandering, searching and discovering nothing, least of all the Lord. Now He comes. Would the fast end as the dream ended, with the Lord coming, going, and I remaining lost? I knew I was lost; I was condemned; I wasn't born again; I wasn't His; I wasn't received; I was rejected.

Who was that man walking with Jesus in the dream? When Jesus came in nine days, would He redeem me? Marilyn's prophecy said so. Was she true or had she been deceived with me? In any case, the dream had to be fulfilled, not as I chose, but as God would choose.

I had no say, no rights, nothing. But I saw that I deserved punishment, total destruction. My sins and failings were over my head. Unless there was mercy, I was reprobate.

Could I ask for mercy? Certainly not! I was never, ever merciful. To the merciful alone, He shows mercy, but to the froward, He shows Himself froward:

"With the pure You will show Yourself pure; and with the froward You will show Yourself froward" (Psalms 18:26 KJV).

So I was condemned, according to Romans:

"Therefore you are without excuse, O man, everyone who judges; for in that in which you judge another, you condemn yourself, for you who judge do the same things. But know that the judgment of God is according to truth on those who practice such things" (Romans 2:1-2 MKJV).

And I read in the Book of Hebrews:

"Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is, but exhorting one another, and so much the more as you see the Day approaching. For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more

sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

He who despised Moses' Law died without mercy on the word of two or three witnesses. Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy of punishment, the one who has trampled the Son of God, and who has counted the blood of the covenant with which he was sanctified an unholy thing, and has insulted the Spirit of grace?" (Hebrews 10:25-29 MKJV)

With whom had I fellowshiped or assembled? What was left but a "certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation" to "devour" me? But it was up to God.

I knew this much: I could do nothing and He decides all. I could only submit and accept whatever His judgment was. Did I hope for grace and mercy? Yes, of course. Would I receive it? According to Marilyn, yes; according to me, I didn't see how or why. Yet, I hoped.

I wrote:

Must I believe? I'm tired of trying, having never succeeded. I'm dead if it's up to me to believe; that's all there is to it. If He gives me to believe, I live; if I must try to believe, I'd sooner take my chances catching the four winds of heaven in my fist. I've tried and utterly failed. That should go without saying, but saying it manifests my unbelief and proves what I say.

Do I know what to do? How to pray? No. Do I know how to praise or give thanks? No, I have nothing, nothing, nothing. I can only wait on the Lord. I think that as I fast from everything for nine more days, I shall go mad. I can only wait. Wait for what, for whom? For the Lord - nothing and nobody else. And He knows it. I take consolation that I wait for Him. Would I do so if it weren't given me? Are not others in agreement? Indeed, it started with Lois, not me.

It just occurred to me that it will be an awesome thing to watch the last minute of the last hour of the tenth day approaching. Such has never ever happened to me. That moment holds the truth of everything forever!

Another hope I have: The Scriptures declare that children of darkness don't know when He comes but the children of light do (1 Thessalonians 5:1-5). Yet verse 8 speaks of faith and love, both of which I am utterly void.

He decides and, I'm told, has decided. What He has written, He has written. If this is true with Pilate, how much more with God!

I see a power, somewhat like radioactivity - it can't be seen, heard, tasted, felt, or smelt, but it's there, doing its work. In time, the results show. So it is with the power of God on a man. Jesus spoke to the men on the road to Emmaus. "Their eyes were held that they should not know Him." But the power was there: "Did not our heart burn within us while He talked with us by the way, and while He opened to us the Scriptures?"

Particle - Teeter Totter

Readers, you'll have noticed how I've gone back and forth, believing and unbelieving these past years. You'll see much more of that in the pages to come. I'm very ashamed of it all and afraid to

include much of it in this book. To see how I've been in such unbelief is so embarrassing, but I must tell it, in order to do you and Truth justice. I want you to know these things, the struggles, faults, errors, weaknesses, horrid unbelief, battles, and consequences. It's been a bloody battle with unbelief. Continuing now...

Particle - In Praise of Marilyn

In my journal, I wrote:

I recall the first dream I had from the Lord. Did it not end with the Lord coming and passing me by, while I was condemned? I recall the vision I had nearly two decades ago wherein Marilyn was in white, helping me in my struggles of life. Was she a guide appointed from above? I have no reason to believe otherwise. She was told I would be her husband; it happened. She received a vision wherein she was giving me drink - it's been happening for years. And she was the one told what's happening now - to name but a few proofs of her help to me.

Then my days ended when I cursed my appointed guide, telling her to "go to hell!" God said to Abraham and his descendants, **"I will bless them that bless you and curse them that curse you."** This promise was for Marilyn, too, and I fell victim to the curse by cursing His anointed. Now it is hell for me; it is my loss.

She's the one who always stood in faith, the one who tolerated patiently, loved as love is described in 1 Corinthians 13. She's the one who has had the power of love and favor with others. What is the power of God? Love! That is the power that moves mountains, saves souls, honors God, and brings peace and victory. Love *is* the victory.

Marilyn, I rebelled against you and God. Now your work is done. You could do no more. In your vision, you and I were on the train. You jumped off while I remained on it, screaming, as it sped to destruction.

"Some have entertained angels unawares," says the Hebrews writer, admonishing us. I've entertained an angel nearly all my "Christian" life. I've been married to one! Look what I've done to the angel the Lord sent me! See therefore what I've done to the Lord - **"Inasmuch as you have done it to the least of My brothers (sisters), you have done it to Me."**

But now I must believe the angel's last words to me, those of Marilyn's prophecy of September 1996.

In the shower this morning, I cried bitterly, realizing my sin, my whole life of death and torment upon me and upon others because of me. Marilyn, you once said that I would be crying (you saw me crying at the end, saying, "I'm sorry"). So it is. I'm dreadfully sorry, especially to you, but to all the others, too - Lois, Trevor, Mark, Sean, Chris, Nathan, Paul - believers and unbelievers. I'm absolutely indebted to all - sorry, so sorry.

I used to read the Bible all the time while Marilyn would read much less. Yet she had the faith, love, hope, power, wisdom, and favor. Why? Because I, as a carnal man, trusted in the letter, having nothing else, but she has had the Law written all along in her heart. I *thought* I had the Book, but she *had* the Book *and* the Author.

Marilyn, I write to you now, not expecting to see you again; I don't really know. Do you remember receiving that I was a "lost soul"? Another term would be "son of perdition." That's the man in my first dream, who was condemned. Marilyn, I've been a lost soul all my life.

But notice: Besides Lois, I too received those verses in Deuteronomy 13 on myself as a false prophet! Why? Yet, was I not that man of faith on November 10, 1989? I have always so wanted the perfect will of God. Going back to my childhood, I wanted to be with Him, identifying and even suffering with Him, and I thought it was fulfilled, at least in part.

Do you remember I once said, "Lord, even if I have to be the anti-Christ for Your sake, if that is what Your will is for me, so be it"? It looks like that is also fulfilled.

Universalism - sure salvation for all, the reconciliation of all things and persons - including Satan. Remember Peter Marshall defining Satan as the "personification of man"? Shall not the corruptible put on incorruption, having been sown in dishonor and raised in honor and glory? Shall not the mortal put on immortality, sown in weakness and raised in power? That's what the Bible says. My point is that though I am utterly corrupt, is there not hope for me?

Marilyn, seeing as how you've been so right, I take hope for the last. Lois, my dream agrees with your visions and prophecies, and I presume (rightly or wrongly) that Bob's dream speaks positively for me. The way I see Bob's dream now is that those two persons are you and me, Marilyn - I with the black rose, you accompanying me to the Lord, Who comes to receive me (Who but He knows why).

Faithful, ministering spirit in the Lord, receive your reward. Bless you in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ. God be with you always. May He continue to empower you to serve, fight on, be courageous... **and** to be of good cheer always, knowing that your end is more than heart could wish or mind could imagine.

You are on the throne, reigning in heavenly, regal splendor, at ease, in wisdom. Beware lest these words carry you away (God forbid). Be faithful and always, as you have done, humble yourself, even as a ruler, and God will be with you to establish both you and your throne, that golden throne, in mercy, truth, and justice. And all shall honor you, woman of faith, woman of peace and righteousness, woman of God.

Marilyn, you said the time would go quickly in these 10 days. It is. A sixth of my time is already gone and that hour draws so near, so fast. I haven't gone for walks. I don't feel I should be in contact with anyone, even to greet or wave. You and Lois expected I would return to let you in on what happened and how it is. I believe the Lord will give you that.

How did I know it was 88 days back from Bob's call to the day I ended the first fast? I had numbered the days and saw #89 as the day Bob called. We had already known there were 88 days to February 6. Aren't these things amazing and wonderful?

When you left, I really didn't know I'd never see you in this life again, but now I know, and it's so sad. But Jesus is our resurrection and life, and one day He'll wipe away all the bad memories and tears and we'll laugh and sing together, shout for joy, and be able to enjoy one another fully. Though I really don't know this, I surely, dearly hope it.

The Lord heal you of all your hurts, all of them, especially those I've caused.

Particle - To Jonathan

And I wrote to Jonathan:

What a wonderful mother you have and what a wonderful relationship with her... flying with her out the window, hand-in-hand! I think I had something like that with you until the stock market indulgence, and then it perished. Son, I'm sorry for what I took away from you, and I mourn my losing you. I hope that one day we will all be able to hold hands and fly together, in heart, in full pleasure.

In the meantime, son, lay down the sword, I beg of you, and take up the plowshare. Sow sustenance and do not reap life of another. Live and let live. Submit to the yoke placed on you, humble yourself before all, serve rather than expecting service, and God will be with you.

Particle - My Boy

I've missed my boy since '93;
Money was all that I could see;
Even robbed him of maternity;
Without my boy since '93.

Hung a plaque up on the wall,
The words of which would say it all,
And failed in my duty to heed the call;
The very thought makes my skin crawl.

Son, don't ever cry, the fault's not yours;
I'm persuaded the Lord will even scores.
How does He do it? By the blood He pours;
I hope we'll meet again on better shores.

Mom, please don't spoil our little boy.
Like me, he'll miss both peace and joy.
Himself and others, he'll annoy,
And we won't have our little boy.

But do us both a favor, please,
See he minds all q's and p's,
Gains knowledge in all he does and sees
So that in the end, the Lord he'll please.

Moon River Estates,
January 29, 1998

Particle - Parting Message to the Others

To all those who have borne the burdens and conflicts, and have believed, suffering hardships and wrongs for His sake, receive your rewards for the glory of God. Blessed is that

one who receives and succours a messenger of God, a brother or sister in Christ, and woe to the one who offends and turns his own way, even for a short time. The Lord be with you all.

Please forgive me for my wrongs to all of you, for my curses, my evil criticisms, and my anger. Love one another and never speak ill of one another, even secretly within your own hearts. God's ears are bigger than ours. He will not be deceived. And these things being His will, there's only reward in serving Him. The Lord comes!

January 29, 11:16 AM

Particle - Come with Me

The Lord has given me instruction
To wait and fast and pray,
To submit to this preparation,
To accept all, come what may.

*"Come, My darling, come away
To a land where there's only day;
Loving hearts await you there,
Where you'll rest, free from all care.*

*Come, My friend, why hesitate?
I know, you're thinking about your mate.
She'll be okay, I promise you,
I have yet more for her to do.*

*The time will come to meet again,
Not in a bog but pleasant glen,
Where you'll meet with warm embrace,
With joy and gladness, face to face.*

*Your son, Jonathan, I gave to you.
I'll make sure his heart is true,
And when their time is finally through,
I'll restore them both to you."*

Moon River Estates
January 29, 1998

Particle - Two Entities at Odds Within

I've believed from the beginning that it was the will of God for a believer to attain unto the victorious walk in this life, to overcome unto the end, to enter that rest God has prepared for at least some, if not all. It's been my conviction, true or false, that God has willed to manifest His sons here on earth, in this life, for His glory.

I haven't seen such happen, but we've heard of many striving for it. I think Hannah Hurnard spoke of it and even suggested she had attained to it. Did she? Did others? I knew I hadn't.

Somehow, it seemed I'd seen that victory in some. Where? In whom? Was [Brian Sherry](#) such a person? Was he the only one I'd witnessed? I didn't think so. But those who have attained are dead; they don't boast or flaunt or command or argue. They're without selfishness, and the Shekinah glory, unseen by the worldly eye, radiates from them, as from Moses in a figure.

But God alone can bring this about, with no help from anyone. It is as a metamorphosis, not something one achieves, but what one passively, without credit to himself, experiences. It's something that happens to him, not something he does, though he has been required to labor for it and, finally, fail to obtain. Then comes God's sovereign mercy to do His good pleasure.

When the Lord spoke of [two entities vying for power](#), I thought it was about Marilyn and me. I also thought it was about Sean and me. But Marilyn and I had also discussed how it was two within me - flesh, the carnal man, that man of sin, the son of perdition, and the spiritual man. True! This is it. They are in deadly combat:

"For the flesh lusts against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh. And these are contrary to one another; lest whatever you may will, these things you do" (Galatians 5:17 MKJV).

It had come to a head and one now, of necessity, would have to die... or both would die if the wrong one died. The spiritual man would have to, and would, prevail. God has willed it so, and so He came to accomplish it.

The battle that raged within was as good as won by the One on the white horse, Who is called "Faithful and True." He leads armies clothed in fine linen, white and clean, all riding white horses. The time and purpose of the chaff have been fulfilled. It must now be cast off, lest it restrain the kernel any longer. The wheat is ready for flour. It's time, at long last; it's time.

Particle - Two Adams

During this fast, I contemplated the reality of the two natures that battle within each believer. The Lord was teaching me that He is about reconciling and not destroying the first Adam in us. Did He not provide skins for Adam and Eve? Did He not also provide them Abel, Seth, and by Seth, the Messiah?

Had Adam and Eve repented and confessed their sin? Not that I'm aware. They wouldn't take blame, but passed it where they could, even on God. But God planned the salvation of all men and will perform it perfectly. If this is not so, not one of us will be redeemed; it is all a sham.

I look back at my life with regret and remorse
Because the carnal man has reigned on the throne, of course.
The spiritual man has been battered and bruised;
He has tried to fight, but was often confused.

"This is my friend, partner and roommate!
Why does he fight me, so full of hate?
He said he agreed with all that I do

And believed the Lord to be entirely true!

What's this? I find him my enemy!
What he really is, now I'm given to see.
To defeat his cause, the Lord will help me
And only then will we both be free.

He'll be put in his place and raised from the dead,
And the Lord, not he, will rule instead.
From now on, we won't hate but adore,
Shouting in unison, 'Let there be no more war.'"

Moon River Estates
January 29, 1998

Particle - Missing Sneakers Solve a Problem

I had just bought a pair of sneakers, yet to be used. Marilyn and I discussed taking them back, seeing I might not need them, but I wasn't going to have them returned until I was gone. I think I recalled seeing my new sneakers taken away. I couldn't find them. Marilyn had taken them back already, and I was angry for what I saw as her presumption and eagerness for my death. She either had full conviction that I was dying or lack of desire that I live, or both. Indeed, I was angry.

This reaction on the heels of a glowing appraisal of my wife as a godly woman! Here we go with a stark demonstration of the carnal man in power - me, unchanged. What could I do about it? Now I sat, consumed by this matter, which would be considered most tedious, yet was so significant to me.

Surely, the Lord would *have to* slay me. He would have to do away with me in one way or another. I couldn't live this way. It wasn't life, but death; not Heaven, but hell; not anything good at all. And I may as well have tried sprouting wings and flying as being able to control my anger.

If I didn't need those shoes, fine, but I spent a good half day shopping for them, only to lose them over a presumptuous, desirous, hopeful attitude on Marilyn's part that I was soon to be gone (and it now seems obvious that I didn't really believe I was going to die). I felt rejected, abused, hated, despised, and a fool for hugging and weeping with her.

Why? Lord, what hell! What corruption! Is it not clear that something has to give? I think that even if it is her conviction, still she could wait. But no - it's like she wants me dead, not just believing I will die. God, help, please! Why these kinds of things torment me so, I shouldn't even bother to try to understand anymore. I only ask that they or I cease to be, whatever the reasons.

But I think, Marilyn, that I should not praise you as I did. Evil does work in you as it does in me. God alone deserves praise and perhaps my discovery of the missing sneakers, minutes after praising you, is His sovereign way of correcting me in that, and you too.

Suddenly, with that last paragraph, I was pacified! How wondrously the Lord works - arranging acts well ahead of words, thoughts, and attitudes, to correct them, rebuking foolish thoughts before they come. He reveals His sovereignty over the most miniscule of matters, delivering us in our foolishnesses, bringing understanding and peace, glorifying Himself.

Suddenly, I wasn't the *least* angry! Lord, bless You! You answer.

Particle - Destroy Everybody and Everything

Several times I have said to God, not idly, "Lord, I am so sick of the evil in this world. I want to see all unrighteousness put away in the earth, and if it means destroying me, too, so be it." Well, I believed *this was it*, finally.

Once I asked the Lord how I would die. I heard that I would go with fire. Then I recalled the vision in 1987 at Paul's place of the star hitting the earth, knowing I was that star. God is a consuming fire. He destroys "that wicked one" with the breath of His mouth and the brightness of His coming. I also perceived that this passage applied to me:

"By the host of your iniquities, by the iniquity of your trade, you have profaned your holy places; so I brought a fire from your midst; it shall devour you, and I will give you for ashes on the earth, before the eyes of all who see you" (Ezekiel 28:18 MKJV).

Some believe that Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28 speak of Satan, his pride and fall, but I say they speak of the man of sin that is within each and every one of us.

Particle - Opposites to Be Reconciled

Reconciled to God and with each other, the children of the flesh will no longer persecute or mimic the children of the Spirit. The Lord will reconcile all things to Himself, and it follows that He will reconcile the natures within each of His children to effect such reconciliation. Hence, we have the fulfillment within ourselves of Isaiah 11:6-10:

"Also the wolf shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the cub lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together; and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the suckling child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the adder's den.

They shall not hurt or destroy in all My holy mountain; for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be the Root of Jesse standing for a banner of the people; to Him the nations shall seek; and His resting place shall be glorious" (Isaiah 11:6-10 MKJV).

As well as:

"The wolf and the lamb will feed together, and the lion will eat straw like the ox; and dust will be the food of the snake. They will not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, says the LORD" (Isaiah 65:25 MKJV).

And:

"And it shall be in that day, the LORD shall again set His hand, the second time, to recover the remnant of His people that remains, from Assyria and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Ethiopia, and from Persia, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the coasts of the sea" (Isaiah 11:11 MKJV).

“He draws His sword a second time, and I am not alone.” - [The Shadow of the Gallows Tree](#)

There was a battle for my soul; my redemption was God’s goal. What a life of pure hell I’d had, and others with me! The pages of my history were black, indeed. I hang my head in shame, totally unrighteous, unworthy, condemned. But the Lord comes to rectify, make new, to save. What I have tried to reach and achieve by effort, He would now freely give. No longer will it be my faith, but His:

“He delights not in the strength of the horse; He takes no pleasure in the legs of a man. The LORD takes pleasure in those who fear Him, who hope in His mercy” (Psalms 147:10-11 MKJV).

Particle - Dream: The Silly Farm

In the night of January 29th, I dreamt of Archie, Cathie, Danny, Paul, and Kerri. They were all acting stupid-silly. I had never seen Paul “bouncy,” as one uses the word, but he was bouncy that night.

I said, “What’s going on here? Sober up!” They knew they were wrong, but I wasn’t getting through. They changed their outward expressions somewhat to conform to my rebukes, but I could see that inwardly, they were saying, “To hell with you! As soon as you’re out of sight, we’ll do as we please, and we want to be light and silly. We don’t care, and we hate what you say.” It was ugly. When one sums it up, wasn’t that the way it had been?

Particle - Kerri’s Unrealistic Expectations

Kerri had unrealistic ideas of many things. One of those was how provision for the farm would come. She insisted that we didn’t have to be concerned about trying to make the farm pay for itself, that all we had to do was trust God and He would provide. While what she was saying was certainly true, I didn’t find the thought even inviting, much less tempting. I didn’t have a witness that she was coming from the right place.

What she was advocating could well have been a matter of exercising faith, but I just couldn’t imagine taking the approach she seemed to be suggesting and still being provided for. When I asked her what we should be doing in the meantime, she had no ideas or suggestions. I felt that we would collectively rot, our idle hands turning to every kind of evil, even debauchery. I could have had the wrong impression of where she was coming from.

I recall Kerri declaring years later that she and Paul would be able to make me so much money I wouldn’t know what to do with it all. It was “as easy as falling off a log.” Her secret? She and Paul “came from families who knew how to make money; it was their life, in their genes; they couldn’t fail.”

I told her she was wrong, that I had learned differently from the Lord while in mutuals, but she didn’t believe me. That was me, she seemed to think, but this was them.

The bad part wasn’t her having an opinion, but her not submitting to authority and what the Lord was doing and what we were asking of her as part of the community. She therefore couldn’t learn and wasn’t corrected of unreality, which was soon to lead her to one of her fantasy ventures, her bakery and café, Neighbors, in Great Falls.

Particle - A Message of Promise and Hope

I began to pray in tongues and then I received the interpretation:

"I am coming soon; take heart. No longer will you be moaning under grievous burdens. As the jailer comes to release a prisoner, I come to release you. It is the time of your release, not your execution. I have pardoned your sin. I take no pleasure in the death of the wicked, but great pleasure in mercy."

I'd never felt so bad... lonely, sad, afraid, desolate, forlorn, forsaken, and without any consolation of mind. I wasn't subject to uncomfortable external circumstances. I wasn't naked or freezing, in a dungeon, starving, or on a rack, tortured and abused, but I don't recall ever feeling such affliction of soul.

At times, I had fear; at times I marveled; but always there was a deep sadness. Shouldn't I be ecstatic, almost unable to contain myself at the words the Lord had just spoken? But I was yet on the side of loss, pain, and darkness, and could only depend on looking to His many promises to see me through to the dawn. If I looked back, it was worse; if I looked forward, I had some relief.

In 1971, just before I came to faith, Harry Roder of [Concept Therapy](#) read my palm and told me my life would be cut short, indicated by the break of a main crease in the palm of my right hand, that line that goes from the point of the hand between the base of the index finger and the thumb, curving down to the base of the hand at the center of the wrist. Archie also claimed to have prophesied that I would not live long. Was my life to end before I reached my 52nd year?

Yet my life *did* end as it was in the world when I became a believer just two years after Harry spoke these things to me. He was right!

Harry Roder said something else. He looked at my nose and forehead and said I would be giving my life in serving mankind. How much truth was there in these things he spoke? Is our destiny written in our bodies? Why not?

Particle - Mysteries Not Necessarily Hidden to Unbelievers

Was Harry right or wrong? Why wouldn't or shouldn't God write the future in His creation? Why should the secrets of His writing be altogether hidden from all? The Zodiac has been abused and misinterpreted by the ignorant and superstitious; consequently, it has been condemned by nominal Christendom. The stars and constellations, however, form a testimony of God concerning the realities of His creation:

"The heavens declare the glory of God; and the expanse proclaims His handiwork" (Psalms 19:1 MKJV).

Because evil workers have put their stamp of pagan belief in the stars and perverted that which was once good doesn't make those things evil. The Gospel is written in the stars. It is also purported to be written in the Great Pyramid of Giza. Certainly, that structure possesses fascinating details, the great multitude of which few, if any, understand. What is God saying in that structure, of which the capstone is conspicuously missing? And Who is the Capstone (Cornerstone)?

The Aztecs, Incas, Mayans, and other Native American peoples had prophecies that have come to pass. Centuries earlier, they prophesied of a white man who would come from the ocean and conquer. Cortez came and conquered. Granted, it may have been prophets of God who originally spoke these things, which were passed on to other generations. Still, the messages were there.

What about the prophecies coming forth from unbelieving men in Scripture? Balaam prophesied of Israel, as God put the words in his mouth. Cyrus of Persia prophesied by the Spirit of God, as did Pharaoh Necho (2 Chronicles 35:20-27) and Caiaphas the High Priest at the time of Christ (John 11:49-51). If Caiaphas, who crucified the Lord of glory, could prophesy accurately, why not anyone else?

As believers in Christ, we must put away our egocentricity or suffer the consequences, as did Josiah, the king of Judah, a faithful man of God who wouldn't heed Pharaoh Necho's warning.

Particle - What Is Waste?

On February 2, 1998, Day 496 from [the prophecy](#), I felt to take a walk to the river near our home. As I went, I thought, "What a waste of time! What am I doing?" Then I was given to consider how productive the hours we spend really are.

We have 24 hours in a day. On average, 8 of those are spent sleeping. About 3 hours are spent in preparation of food and eating - for some, counting shopping and cleanup, much more. Perhaps another 2 hours or more are spent on recreation, vacations, hygiene, resting, and talking. That already makes 13 hours of what could be considered unproductiveness.

Assuming we live to be 80, consider that the first 10 or more years of our lives are more dependent than productive, as are the last 10 for many, which would translate into another approximate 6 hours per day, for a total of 19 hours per day of unproductiveness. Besides that, we suffer illnesses and injuries, delays, losses, failures, and various unforeseen circumstances, which could cost us any number of hours; let us safely estimate 1 more to bring the total to 20. That leaves us with no more than 4 hours, or one sixth of time in our lives, for what we consider to be productive.

And what do we work for? As we peruse history, it is filled with violence and destruction. Much of what we "usefully produce" is taken away, without consent or compensation. So what is waste? And what is productivity?

Particle - Vision: Deer, Wolf, and Lamb

I brought a lawn chair with me to the beach by the river and sat down with my back to the chilly wind. Soon, in my mind's eye, a deer approached from behind and came within a few feet of me to my left (I was sitting downwind, silent and still). It didn't see me. Suddenly, for some evil reason, I decided to jump up and scare it, shouting and flailing my arms (in my mind, not externally). The deer was greatly startled, almost to a heart attack, and fled for its life. I sat down again.

Then I thought, "Why did you do that? What good reason was there for that? You did it for perverse pleasure and entertainment." Ashamed, I sat there, admitting how depraved and destructive a creature I was. The deer had been adversely affected for time to come - more than we realize, in ways we don't realize, just as people can be affected for life by traumatic experiences.

Then came a wolf, a healthy one about the size of a large German Shepherd. It also approached from behind and to my left, just where the deer had stood. I thought, “Am I in danger?” But it stood about eight feet away and looked at me quietly. I felt no threat.

And then suddenly, on my right, stood a lamb. It was young and small, yet healthy and plump, and it was very woolly. It just stood there, about eight feet or so away, slightly ahead of me, as was the wolf.

Both the wolf and the lamb laid down where each stood. Under the wolf’s feet was long, luscious green grass. As it lay, it began to eat the grass. The lamb did nothing but lie there and look ahead at nothing in particular, unafraid.

The wolf enjoyed the grass considerably. When done, it casually arose and walked over to the lamb. The lamb suddenly perked up and cocked its head, as if to say, “Uh, oh! What’s this?” The wolf then laid down on the right side of the lamb, facing in the same direction, side by side. The lamb just sat there, suspicion dissipating.

The wolf began to lick the lamb’s face. Oh, if words could describe the joy and thankfulness that suddenly coursed through that lamb’s entire being! It didn’t show it outwardly, yet I could see and feel it.

In a few minutes they got up, walked around, sniffed and grazed. At that point, I thought, “Couldn’t it be that, as a lion or tiger raised from a cub or kitten can grow up to suddenly, inexplicably turn on a child or owner, so this wolf, without warning, could follow its nature and instincts and... ‘So long, lamb’?”

The answer was an instant, “No.” The wolf had been eating grass, thoroughly enjoying it, even as the lamb lay helplessly nearby and available. Neither was the wolf restrained in any way. It could never revert back to its old nature. **“...and on earth peace, goodwill toward men,”** or, **“and on earth, peace to men of goodwill.”**

As I sat there, I recalled what I had said: “Lord, wipe away all evil, and if it includes me, so be it.” It occurred to me that not only must it include, but it must begin with, me.

Particle - Pride Trumps Practicality

Jonathan asked for a walking stick. Why a walking stick? Why not? I’ve often sensed and even tasted when trying one out that a walking stick is good. Consider that in ancient times they used staves. Why not now? One gets support while walking, can lean on it, fight off a dog, defend oneself from attackers, poke, pry, reach, leverage - there are many practical uses.

I’ve been reluctant to have and use one, lest any should think I was trying to look like a prophet or be pretentious, a notion people occasionally may have about staves.

Why do people worship the Joneses, conform to the crowd, wear the same clothes, “speak the same language,” drive the same cars, join the same clubs, belong to the same churches, shop at the same stores around the world, and eat the same food? Why do women wear high heels? Why do men wear suits and ties?

Are these necessarily good for one or do they serve some practical purpose? Not necessarily, but they do it anyway. This world isn't a practical one by any means - it's all part of its existence in death and hell since the beginning of time.

How surprising when nonconformity sometimes works so much better than convention! Ghandi used passive resistance and overcame British occupation, though empires have been established by force of arms. A saw blade set backwards in a circular saw will cut substances harder than wood. The Bamix beater works by implosion. I have a nail clipper that is convex instead of concave. Does it make sense, seeing the shape of the finger is convex? But it works, and in my opinion, better than the other - I love it. Countless inventions have come by persisting when experts would cry, "Impossible," as with Henry Ford's 8 cylinders in one block.

While people think one must eat to be healthy, healing often comes by fasting instead of eating, and disease often comes by eating.

How does the Lord deliver us from the things we fear? He does it not by removing those things or by separating us from them - we are to walk *through* the valley of the *shadow* of death.

The Bible speaks of laboring to enter into rest (which is what I was doing at the time of this writing). Does not one rest to prepare to enter into labor? Lois once received, concerning her conflict with Howard: *"Give the enemy what he wants and he will flee from you."* Lois gave up her precious son to her husband who demanded him, and the enemy was defeated. Jesus said, **"Keep your life and you'll lose it; lose it for My sake and you'll have it."**

Many things we have thought to be good were evil, and vice versa. One man was so depressed he wished to kill himself. He thought of exercising himself to a heart attack. It didn't work. The more he pushed himself, the healthier he got and the better he felt. (I'm not suggesting this works for everyone.)

Those who succeed ask, "Why?" and "Why not?" of the simplest matters. Drive, delve, dig, dare, defy, determine, deny, destroy, even die, if necessary (and usually it is), then do, deliver, and dominate. Indeed, nothing worthy is accomplished without the shedding of blood.

Have faith and nothing will be impossible to you. That's what Jesus said. Throw that word "can't" entirely out of your vocabulary. Throw off those binding cords; chew them off, cut them with your toenails, sit behind a magnifying glass and burn them off with the sun's concentrated rays, find a mouse to sever them, or shrink and they'll fall off.

That's often the solution! Shrink and chains fall off. Humble yourself.

How are we bound? Not by external bonds but those within. We are fat with custom, tradition, decorum, logic, pride, conformity, sloth, negligence, complacency, selfishness, man-pleasing, fear, worry, doubt, and ignorance. If we cease feeding ourselves, if we humble ourselves, we diminish in power and size, and off the cords fall, without a cut or any external device. The answer is always within.

Particle - Resourcefulness

"I can't do it; I don't have what I need." What does one need? Or what is it one thinks he needs? I love the person that comes in saying, "Well, okay, so let's try this or that, or maybe we could use this, or perhaps we could get so-and-so to do it or tell us of someone who can." Blessed is the

resourceful one, because though he sits in his cell, chained by the neck, wrists, and ankles to a stone wall, he will find a way to be free. Maybe he'll even patent what he discovers and get rich.

What is our greatest, most important central source? The Lord gives to them that humbly ask and believe, those not self-seeking, those unfettered by the thinking of the world. If we seek and strive only for ourselves, our power is puny, rewards are petty, and obstacles impossible to overcome. Seek for others, for right and good, and we become omnipotent and successful. Declared Paul the apostle, **"I can do all things through Christ, Who strengthens me."**

Particle - Word of the Lord to Marilyn

In response to questions I felt Marilyn was asking in bitterness, words came forth for her on February 4th:

"Daughter, I also promised others great things (which promises hold), but instead of receiving the fulfillment of them, I led them into wilderness, into battle, fire, flood, loss, failure, hopes deferred, desperation, persecution, pain, tears, sorrow, tribulation, and even loss of life. I had to do those things with them and I had to do them with you. It is not as man would have it, I understand, but it is My chosen, necessary way. Those I choose must suffer; those I love must all pass through the same fires in their lives, or I can have no part in them or they in Me.

The world seeks happiness – that is their goal. I give some the things they think would make them happy and, behold, their miseries multiply. Having received those things they set their hearts on, they lost even the one thing you still have remaining within you. I gave them that which they sought and thought to make them happy but from you, as well as all My chosen, I have withheld those things and have given you and subjected you instead to those things which, for the time, make you unhappy.

Daughter, have you not been unhappy? I have made it so and you will soon know why. But one thing you have, which others have lost in having what they were after to make them happy, and that is hope. Because I love you, that hope is sealed within you – you are a prisoner of it, and nothing can remove you out of My hand. I will finish My work and you will have your reward, as I have promised. Behold, daughter, I make all things new."

"For we are saved by hope. But hope that is seen is not hope; for what anyone sees, why does he also hope for it? But if we hope for that which we do not see, then we wait for it with patience" (Romans 8:24-25 MKJV).

"Therefore girding up the loins of your mind, being sober, perfectly hope for the grace being brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ..." (1 Peter 1:13 MKJV).

Particle - Paul and Aaron

The Lord [spoke](#) to me over a decade before, telling me that just as He had given Aaron to Moses to be a spokesperson for him, so He was giving me Paul Cohen to be a spokesperson for me. There are several striking similarities between Paul and Aaron:

Aaron, of the tribe of Levi, became the first High Priest, his tribe the priesthood tribe of Israel. Paul's last name, Cohen, means "priest." Cohens commonly descend from the tribe of Levi, through Aaron's line.

Paul and Aaron have certain similar idiosyncrasies. They're easily influenced by others to do things they ought not. For example, while Moses was away, the people demanded that Aaron make them a golden calf. He complied. Aaron also fell to murmuring with his sister Miriam against Moses. Paul has similarly fallen to following the carnal will of others, which, of course, is contrary to God's will.

Question: How would I be having a ministry like Moses in the afterlife, unless Paul was also to die physically, if Marilyn was right?

Particle - Lois Seeing Things

I received that Lois was seeing things during these fast days. It would take honesty and looking at those things realistically, having a commitment to Truth, the Lord Himself, for her to openly declare what she saw. Several times it came to me that she would see the situation at the farm for what it was, and with Sean, Marilyn, and me in particular. I mentioned this to her; it was evident she was struggling, though trying to put on a bold face.

Particle - The Second Eve

By revelation, I once [said](#) Marilyn was the "second Eve." Was it true or was I deceived? If the Lord is the last Adam, how could Marilyn be the last Eve? Was I in the Lord's stead as the last Adam? Was I identified with Him in His coming?

The first Adam followed Eve when she was deceived. Paul Cohen believed that both Eves had to fall by temptation and deception, first in the beginning as happened, and in the end of this age.

When Marilyn heard the words of her prophecy on September 24, 1996, she didn't submit all of it to elders. The part she didn't divulge was that she would be marrying Sean after I died. Had she made this known, we could have judged that portion of the prophecy as deception. It was her duty to bring those words forward, and she failed (which disobedience speaks for itself as to the nature of the prophecy).

If the second Eve had to fall as did the first, then the second Adam must be a man and must have been following her in order to turn from her to God again. I have followed Marilyn in deception and have brought the others with me. Now was the time to turn away from her and back to God.

This time, by the power and will of the last Adam, Jesus Christ, all would be reversed. While the first Fall ended in condemnation, the second would be reversed in mercy, so that the Lord may have the glory of the resurrection and reconciliation to Himself of all things.

Besides Adam and Eve, there was a serpent in the first Fall, that [serpent](#) being a man, not a snake as we know it. Therefore, would it not be reasonable that if there were those three in the beginning, there would be a serpent involved in the end? Did I not [prophecy](#) in December of 1997, *"As an angel shall he come and as a devil shall he go"*? Was that not how it happened in Eden?

Particle - Three Historical Feasts and Fulfillments

Did God not establish three major annual solemn Feasts in Israel? There were also three major events in human history:

One, there was the Flood in Noah's day, immersing or baptizing the entire earth, paralleled by the first Feast, Passover.

Millennia later, there was the first coming of Jesus Christ to set in motion the raising of mankind from its fallen state, a resurrection or empowerment of God paralleled by the second Feast, Pentecost, when Jesus fulfilled His mission of bestowing His Spirit.

Finally, there is the reconciliation of all things by the return of the Lord Jesus Christ to establish the rule of the Kingdom of God, the fulfillment of the Feast of Tabernacles, Emmanuel, God dwelling with us.

The Gospel isn't about going to Heaven, but of Heaven dwelling on earth among men:

Revelation 21:1-3 MKJV

(1) And I saw a new Heaven and a new earth. For the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. And the sea no longer is.

(2) And I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her Husband.

(3) And I heard a great voice out of Heaven saying, "Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they will be His people, and God Himself will be with them and be their God."

Particle - Archie

I received that Archie would never lie to me again when he returned, and he would hear clearly from the Lord (which he had not in the past). The main difference would be that he will care because I care and because the Lord has performed His reconciliation.

Archie will wish to come as soon as he is able, rejoicing, knowing, though with some faint doubts (perhaps not) that he will be received with open arms to be forever with the Lord. How can this be, considering how he was when he left - dark and vicious, and how he was presently? The Lord is able.

Particle - Redemption for All

In Adam, we all fell. But he and his wife, Eve, were shown mercy. God covered them with skins, gave them children, and promised ultimate redemption (Genesis 3:15). Therefore, having been in him, shall not all men be redeemed? Even on Cain, who murdered his brother, God set a mark for protection. Why should God protect him in this life, only to be burned in hell forever and ever in the next?

Ishmael, who, by nature, mocked Isaac, was also blessed, he and Isaac burying their father, Abraham (Genesis 25:9).

Esau, the fornicator and profane person, was blessed; he and Jacob buried their father, Isaac (Genesis 35:29).

King Saul went to be with Samuel after his death on the battlefield as an unbelieving believer (1 Samuel 28:15-19).

After His resurrection, Jesus went to the spirits in prison, who had died in the Flood, and preached to them the Good News:

1 Peter 3:18-22 MKJV

(18) For Christ also once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, indeed being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the Spirit;

(19) in which also He went and preached to the spirits in prison,

(20) to disobeying ones, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared (in which a few, that is, eight souls were saved through water);

(21) which figure now also saves us, baptism; not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ;

(22) Who is at the right hand of God, having gone into Heaven, where the angels and authorities and powers are being subjected to Him.

Redemption is destined for everyone, not all determined in this life only, but also in the ages to come.

Particle - “Make Your Enemies Now”

I was considering the coldness and enmity of many people in the past, the most recent one being [Casey Overbeek](#) next door. I had tried to be friendly to so many of them, perhaps because I assumed it was the “Christian” thing to do, or I was trying to reach them, or because by nature, as a believer, I was spiritually inclined that way. I was always hoping something would change with them.

Looking back, I feel foolish, not having realized they wanted nothing to do with us. I would return and talk again as though everything was fine. In trying to pretend they weren’t our enemies, the Lord said to me, *“Make your enemies now.”* I took it to mean, “Call a spade a spade; see it as it is and act accordingly; don’t play games.”

This Scripture comes to mind: **“He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still” (Revelation 22:11 KJV).**

Particle - Consolation Contrasts Condemnation

There was now working in me a deep, heartfelt desire to comfort and embrace the one who makes a mistake, to give life to one in time of need, unlike how I’ve always been - condemning, scolding, criticizing, and harshly, cruelly imparting death. What a horrible, brutish fiend I’ve been!

When one, in compassion, consoles the one who goofed up, showing mercy and understanding, he actually restores, then and there, all losses, physical and otherwise. How? I don’t know, but it happens as surely as the sun rises. In condemnation, all hope of recovery is lost; in compassion, not only is all regained, but improved and increased. It’s true! It’s a miracle of God - He does it. Forgiveness is His choice of goodness and mercy, and solution to loss and failure.

See then, how much in my life (death) I've lost! Hear what I say; remember. It is indeed a marvelous, precious truth I've never realized. **"Love answers all things."**

Particle - The Ninth Day

I was now one day away from an expected death or, at least, I didn't know what to expect. I was glad, for many reasons, of the prospect of leaving this world.

Physically, I had neck and knee injuries, joint pain, weight issues, and suspected prostate problems.

Mentally, I was never able to comprehend many things.

Emotionally, I was often bad-tempered, angry, anxious, covetous, and fearful.

Socially, my own family and friends rejected me, my wife eagerly awaiting my death to marry a man more than young enough to be her son, who also impatiently awaited my demise.

Spiritually, as far as I was concerned, I'd been a basket case, a loser, a failure.

So who in his right mind would want to stick around under such conditions in this world? I had my faults, weaknesses, and infirmities, and I was sick of them. I wanted to leave and looked forward to it. In my estimation, this life wasn't worth living. I thought these things not out of self-pity but from a sincere, honest perspective. I decided that unless God gave me a new body, mind, soul, and spirit, I definitely wasn't interested in hanging around.

Particle - The Day Is Here

I was almost certain that on this tenth day I would be physically departing. And what was I doing on my last day? I wouldn't call anyone, believing I was to remain isolated from everyone for ten full days. I took out the compost and the garbage, serviced the vacuum cleaners, trimmed the plants, and cleaned up the neighbor's dog droppings in the yard.

Are these the kinds of activities one ought to occupy himself with on his last day on earth? Evangelist D. L. Moody is known to have said that if he knew it was the last day, he would plant a tree. The ground was now frozen. Perhaps Moody hadn't thought of that.

This day was the 11th anniversary of my [vision](#) of the star hitting the earth. So far, there was nothing at all earth shattering. I would wait to the 24th hour.

Was the Lord coming for me? How would He come? As a man? In Spirit? I think in Spirit. What a strange life, a strange year, the last 10 days, my last day, last hours!

I wasn't afraid of the approaching hour. Whatever I'd been, I knew this: The Judge of all the earth would do right.

"I wonder what goes on in your minds. Have I missed anything? Consider, do as you should, regardless of all that is said here. I wrote a letter to Archie on the computer and changed it some yesterday. Do as the Lord leads. I have some things to say to a few people. Please pass them on."

Particle - A Word for John Schussler

On this last day, strangely enough, I had a word for our neighbor, John Schussler. He was not one to be morally committed, nor was his Mormon marketing manager who advised him to deceptively label his poisonous syrups as “made with all-natural ingredients.” I wrote:

You tell John to take his heart off money and open up. Look at his label of “made with all-natural ingredients” and see that it is misleading. There are “all-natural ingredients” in his product but so are there others, and one of the most lethal in the food industry - refined sugar. And he uses chemicals on the ground for his saskatoon bushes, which pollute his “all-natural ingredient.” Unthinking people pick up his bottle of syrup, read the label, and say within themselves, “Hmm... it’s all natural. Great, I’ll take some,” poisoning themselves unwittingly, because deceived by unscrupulous merchandising.

John! John! What will it take? Were you not once past death’s door? Does that have no impact on you? What will? The grace of God and that alone! (Let him read this if you will.) Pay attention, John; I’m leaving in a few hours, healthy enough, and I’m talking to you. You’re always boasting about dealing people down to as little as possible, not considering you take their life away and leave them sad, bitter, resentful, and poorer in body, soul, and spirit. In essence, you murder. Yes, that is so.

Please listen, for your sake especially. It won’t do to get unfair prices. Yes, you can argue, “They didn’t have to buy it.” I tell you, your arguments will not stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ. In fact, they will dig your hole even deeper in His sight.

Don’t you dare be angry with me, us, for long. I can understand and tolerate an initial negative reaction, my friend, but don’t stay there; don’t. If you heed what I say, things will go well for you; if not, they won’t. I’m not criticizing you, John. I can’t; I’ve been the same way, probably worse.

I can only tell you now that we don’t get away with anything. God is no fool, John. Others you can fool, us you can fool; God you won’t. He will fool you. Turn around, change, and live. There are many good things held in store for those who forsake themselves and their own interests for righteousness’ sake, which until now, you’ve despised.

And go organic. It’s not impossible, as you say it is. Get *Acres USA*, read and find that **many** are doing it and more profitably in every way, in all fields of agriculture, big or small - believe it.

There would soon be significant developments for John.

Particle - Last Words to Jonathan

Son, I look at your homemade kite on the ping pong table. Sorry I didn’t help make you one. Jamie said to me one day, “Jonathan said you are going to die.” I replied, “There are different kinds of death.”

Jonathan, God give you the grace to love Him with every part of your being. There’s nothing else worth anything, son. If I’ve given you an impression of God that is undesirable, forgive me. Seek Him out for yourself and find out He’s there for you like nobody can be.

There's nothing to fear or feel bad about - please believe me - you'll see. I want you to remember this one thing if nothing else: No matter how impossible your circumstances are, how much trouble you find yourself in, if you call on the Lord, He will hear and be there to help and to save.

Aside from your birth, the only vision I've ever had of you, son, was as a sphinx in a desert. You were alone, yet there were many other sphinxes in that same desert, facing the same way - each was alone like you, yet it seemed like you were all together in spirit and purpose. It was good. You are called and chosen and will know it when the time comes. The Lord is with you. It won't be easy; you'll have sorrow and suffering, as we all do in this world, but the end will be more than worth it, son. You'll shine with the saints.

Particle - Broken Before Broker Rick Dempsey

I'm ashamed I went into the mutuals and ashamed before Rick Dempsey. There he was on a believing path of sorts, and there I was preaching and whoring after the riches of this world, also financing corporations and activities evil and harmful to people and the earth. There are the inescapable admonitions of the Scriptures we can explain away, or against which we can rationalize or argue, but in the end we will answer with guilt.

Concerning mammon, the Scriptures are Matthew 6:19-24, 33, Luke 12:21, 1 Timothy 6:7-10, and Hebrews 11:26. Concerning being an example to others:

"But whoever shall offend one of these little ones who believes in Me, it would be better for him that an ass's millstone were hung around his neck, and he be sunk in the depth of the sea. Woe to the world because of offenses! For it is necessary that offenses come; but woe to that man by whom the offense comes!" (Matthew 18:6-7 MKJV)

The stock market is at once Satan's playground and torture chamber, and while the world may partake therein, it's no place for the one who seeks to know and to do God's will.

"Please apologize to Rick and Cindy, read these things to Rick, and tell him I'm so sorry for the horrible example I've been by being in the stock market, seeking to lay up treasures on earth.

'The *love* of money, not money, is evil,' they all reply who wish to pursue financial gain. But the Lord has shown me that he who at first does not love it, but sets out to pursue it, will love it. It is a law. Even the answer they give already reveals the state of the heart as to which master is served. Read all this to Rick."

Particle - A Word to Lois

"Lois, be strong and courageous, full of faith, as you have been. The Lord is with you. I appreciate having you. Remember Aunt Carrie's? As you've said, 'Who would have known?'"

Particle - A Word to Christopher and Nathan

"Chris, you're a fighter. Stop fighting and let the Lord fight for you. I think you'll find that He can do a better job, and you'll taste victory in those battles."

"Nathan, put away your duplicity."

While I had words concerning other people, I finally recorded, “If Archie ever comes around, see if he can follow up on Randy Wilson - he was the one who planted the seeds on proper eating and organics. Thank Randy, invite him, and let him know what we’re doing, which is partially due to what he shared with us years ago.”

Particle - Last Word to Marilyn

“The Lord give you grace, dear wife, and succour you in this hour of trial and need. The Lord bless you and keep you and make you to be according to His calling. I love you and want all that He would want you to have. (1 Thessalonians 4:13 and f.; John 11:25-26)”

Particle - Experience: The Presence of the Lord

At the end of my ten-day fast, in the last hour, at 2:50 PM of February 6th, I had just finished adding to a letter written to Archie. All along, I had been telling the Lord, “Take me or change me. I refuse to go on as I am.”

Then rather suddenly, I found myself saying, “Lord, I prefer to go with You or, failing that, I ask You to give me a new body, mind, and spirit... *however*, if You desire that I continue with weakness and frailty, so be it. Your will be done.”

I went to the kitchen sink, while talking to the Lord, when suddenly I felt His Presence behind me. I spun around, expecting to see Him standing there. I didn’t see Him, but I felt Him. I didn’t hear an audible Word, but He communicated to me. I wouldn’t recognize His Message until the next day when relating the incident to Marilyn.

Particle - An Apparent Short Circuit

For those ten days, I had been avoiding food, people, television, papers, phone, radio, and general connection with the outside world. The only person I had to try to avoid was Jamie Overbeek next door, and had successfully done so until this, the 240th hour. Here he comes to the back door near our dining table where I sit.

Less than ONE HOUR before the time is up. What was I to do? I had been feeling for some days that I shouldn’t be legalistic about it. I answered the door, and he asked if I had seen his dog, which was only in recent minutes lost. I told him that in an hour things were going to be very different, but that I would help him if I could. He thanked me and left.

Particle - Last Hour Struggles

Did I blow it? One of my infirmities had been man-pleasing. I answered the door, seeing him there, not wanting to refuse or reject him. It was far more important, however, that I obey the Lord. I caved to my infirmity. I thought, “There I go! The will of God and the reward in this ten-day fast is all gone now, forever!”

Then I began to realize that here was a clear demonstration of how I still had my infirmities. It was another reminder that it wasn’t about my righteousness; I will always fail, but He will always succeed.

The fast was finished, the job done. But what was it I had sensed in the Lord’s Presence in this last hour of the fast?

Particle - Time Up! Jonathan Calls

Jonathan called just after my final hour was up, around 4 PM on Friday. I was still there. I was thankful to hear his voice and they were certainly wondering what was happening to me. Dead men don't answer a phone.

They had news for me: They awoke on Wednesday morning, February 4th, to find that the water system had failed. Seeing Chris was in charge of the water, they went to wake him and found his room empty. Nathan was also absent. They assumed the boys were aware of the water problem and were out rectifying it. They soon found out, however, that Chris and Nathan secretly stole away in the middle of the night. Marilyn was shocked.

On the heels of the shock and chagrin, there set in a sense of betrayal. It became obvious that Chris and Nathan had planned details of their exit several days and weeks before, while pretending everything was normal.

However, in prayer, Lois received that the Lord removed the boys and that it was good. Surely, there was always conflict with them. Nathan had left a note. He expressed great bitterness about many things, especially toward Lois. He hated her.

For some reason, perhaps because Nathan and Chris had been among the first to move to the farm with their parents, they somehow felt they partially owned the farm. They resented authority exercised over them, no matter who exercised it. There had been a day when Marilyn and I instinctively felt they needed to be told the farm wasn't theirs, that Marilyn and I were the owners. When Marilyn announced this to everyone, their countenances and attitudes changed from that day forth.

At one time, I had said, "This farm is yours," but I spoke not in literal terms. The meaning was simply that all the farm provided was theirs - while they were there, they would be provided for; it was their home. "Our home is your home," was the idea, as if to a welcome guest. It seems they jumped to the conclusion I was saying they were literal, legal owners, but this is only speculation on my part.

Archie had the same sort of attitude, even proposing that I [sign ownership](#) over to him. Perhaps they got their idea from him. They simply didn't fit in, but we didn't know what to do.

It's marvelous what fasting unto the Lord can accomplish. I've seen amazing, unexpected results from fasting, sometimes during and also after.

Particle - Jonathan's Vision: Rotting Log

This was the third vision Jonathan had that I know of. He saw a rotting log lying on the ground surrounded by dandelions. There were no flowers on the dandelions, only green leaves. Shadows of unseen trees that were in the background covered the log. An ocean lay in the foreground. It was a summer afternoon.

The time would come that we understood the vision and, somewhat later, the significance of the dandelions.

Particle - The Lord's Answer

It's interesting how the Lord can communicate just by His Presence. The day after the fast, as I related to Marilyn what happened in the last hour, I suddenly realized what He had communicated. When I expressed willingness to serve the Lord with my infirmities, He responded, *"I'm so glad. That is what I've been waiting to hear."*

Particle - Confirmation of My Understanding

I talked to Marilyn, Lois, and Sean about my encounter with Jamie. All believed there was no problem. What occurred to me was that the Lord arranged for me to fail so that I could not walk away from the fast feeling I had accomplished something. We are all in unrighteousness, totally dependent on His mercy. In and of ourselves, we can do nothing right.

Particle - Honesty with Marilyn

Husbands and wives should be able to be perfectly candid with each other, especially if they have faith, but alas, it isn't always so. Why?

One, they are reluctant or afraid to openly admit a possible deterioration of appreciation and love for each other;

two, they may not even realize their feelings have changed since first meeting and marrying, the change being so gradual;

three, even if they realize their feelings have changed, it may not occur to them that their feelings should be expressed;

and four, they don't want to hurt each other.

One morning after the fast, a flood of confessions came forth from me. I had never been honest about Marilyn, her looks, and certain of her traits. I had never had a certain kind of attraction for her, but never admitted it, afraid of hurting her. My failure or refusal to be honest and open did more harm than good. I was trying to be kind, overlooking faults and flaws, so as to be the "good Christian husband," but I was disingenuous. Jesus had said, **"Behold, an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile."**

I confessed hatred for her, yet I knew somehow that such wasn't accurate - it was and it wasn't. The dual nature of flesh and spirit within the Christian tends to confuse (one part loves while the other hates). Memories from past states of being can contrast or mix with knowledge of the present state, which confounds.

One also must realize that **the way** a person is can be confused with **what** or **who** he or she is. The former usually changes while the latter seldom does.

Confessing, I was able to joyfully accept her, preferring her as she was to any other way without reciprocation or reward. I confessed **everything** to the "bottom of the barrel." Did it feel good! Curiously, I had never meant harm or deception for evil's sake - much like a boy getting a pair of socks for a gift and painfully putting on the best face to conceal disappointment when one is expected to express gratitude.

Marilyn wasn't looking for flattery or reassurance of her looks and person so much as honesty, and I hadn't been honest.

Particle - Benefits of the Fast

Some benefits gained from my fast:

I was granted to submit myself to serving the Lord with my many infirmities. I then realized how the apostle Paul had accepted his infirmities and even gloried in them:

“And He said to me, ‘My grace is sufficient for you, for My power is made perfect in weakness.’ Most gladly therefore I will rather glory in my weaknesses, that the power of Christ may overshadow me. Therefore I am pleased in weaknesses, in insults, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ’s sake; for when I am weak, then I am powerful” (2 Corinthians 12:9-10 MKJV).

I became honest with Marilyn, confessing my ill feelings and thoughts about her all those years, thereby unburdening and clearing the air, helping both of us. She said she had known all along how I felt and was thankful to hear the honesty. Often the unspoken is not secret at all.

Heretofore, I had complained about the farm, once even calling it a “money pit.” I was overwhelmed by all that I thought needed to be done with it, finding the task to be greater than I felt I could handle. During the fast, I confessed I couldn't handle it and came to see the challenge as a blessing and not a curse.

Nephews Chris and Nathan were a problem to me. They had been at the farm, a place I expected to be a community of believers. Plainly, however, they didn't believe. What to do? I didn't feel right about asking them to leave, and they seemed to want to stay. On the seventh day of my fast, they were gone. I believe the fast precipitated their voluntary departure. Speaking of them, I wrote in my journal:

“I once prophesied that if Chris didn't put away his anger, cruelty would be his master. Leaving the protection, he is now open and fair game for the enemy. The Lord will now judge Chris and Nathan.”

We would soon see it happen.

Particle - Death of the Old Man

The number “50” had come to Marilyn, though she didn't know why. I found that from December 17, 1997, the day of the prophecy of the [man that troubled us](#) to the end of the fast, February 6, 1998, was 50 days.

Years before, my father [died](#) on a date that was 50 days after February 6, that being March 27, I believe, and buried on my birthday, April 1. One's father is often referred to as the “old man.” The “man of sin” is also referred to in Scripture as the “old man.” Spiritually, Dad could represent the old man. It seemed the prophecy had a double meaning, pertaining to a specific person (Sean), but also to the “man of sin,” the carnal nature referred to by the apostle Paul in 2 Thessalonians chapter two.

Is it possible, I asked myself, that I might physically die 50 days from February 6, on the anniversary of my father's death, or perhaps on my birthday, the day he was buried in 1985?

Particle - Jonathan's Secret Word

On the evening of February 9, 1998, as I was keeping Jonathan company until he fell asleep, he said to me, "Dad, I have something to say to you, but I want you to promise you will tell nobody. Promise?" I was hesitant in making such a promise, having learned the value of not making vows, believing God's counsel to "not swear," but Jonathan wouldn't tell me what he wished to tell me unless I promised not to tell. My curiosity got the better of me and I promised. He then said:

"You *are* dead - part of you is here and part of you is there right now in Heaven. You're different since the fact. I can't explain it."

I was elated at this revelation, which I knew was from God. It confirmed my innermost feelings and convictions. I don't know why or how it happened, but it wasn't long before I spoke about what Jonathan received... to Marilyn, I believe. I failed to keep the promise. I didn't say Jonathan was the source of the message, which, I believed or rationalized, was the main reason for Jonathan not wanting me to tell anyone. I suspected he didn't want enmity with his mother and he didn't want her to be hurt.

In a conversation, I later confessed to Sean that I had made a promise to Jonathan, broke it, and condemned myself before the Lord for making a vow and not keeping it. Why did I confess this to him? I have no idea. These days of unbelief were such confusion to me. Sean got a chuckle out of it.

I believe the main reason I told Marilyn and Sean is because I was vindicated by the prophecy. I also thought that perhaps they would reconsider their position and get on with reality. Of course, it didn't happen. Furthermore, Jonathan was upset with me for telling. "You promised me you wouldn't tell anyone, Dad." I countered that I believed I knew why he didn't want me to tell and so didn't do the harm he feared.

It now escapes my memory as to whether I said it was revelation or a prophecy from Jonathan. In any event, I was wrong - I betrayed his confidence. He never confided anything to me again.

Particle - A Day of Great Anguish of Soul and Spirit

About 9:30 AM on February 10, 1998, while at breakfast, a great anguish suddenly and inexplicably crept into my soul, overcoming me. It was like something terrible had happened somewhere. In *Star Wars*, Ben Kenobi sensed something terrible happened when the Death Star destroyed the planet Alderaan. The feeling I experienced was so strong I couldn't bear to sit at the table with Marilyn and Jonathan.

I wondered if perhaps it was now my time to go. Crying bitterly, I asked the Lord what was going on. I felt like something very tragic was happening. Did something happen to Chris according to my prophecy? Suicide? It was horrible!

I looked at the date of the calendar, it being the 10th day of February, the 2nd month. That sounded familiar. I went to the Scriptures and found the tenth day of the second month, the 40th day of Noah's 600th year, to be the day Noah and his family entered the ark and were shut in by the Lord,

seven days before the flood began. I realized I was feeling his great pain and anguish of soul in that day. I had never felt that way before or since.

As we read the Scriptures, we don't realize the tribulations the saints of old experienced in their various trying circumstances. We read the record and understand so little, the Bible covering only bare essentials. The details of so many of these incidents would be very interesting, indeed.

God gave me to experience Noah's feelings on that day. I had a new appreciation for their intensity and horribleness. This lasted for a few hours and dissipated. The people in the ark were not rejoicing, not at all. **"I take no pleasure in the death of the wicked,"** says the Lord (Ezekiel 33:11).

Note: As I review this manuscript in April of 2015, 17 years later, it occurs to me that I could very well have been feeling the fruits of the betrayal of my son's confidence the night before. I know that isn't so or the Lord would have made it known to me long ago, but still, one event was immediately on the heels of the other, within the same day if one counts a day beginning the evening before, as described in the Bible.

Particle - My Expectations

On February 11th, I decided to record my thoughts and expectations concerning Marilyn's prophecies and what the future held in store for us all. It would be interesting to see how much of this will or won't be, what's prophetic and what isn't. I wasn't willing to share my thoughts with anyone else at the time, especially Marilyn. I wrote:

If I were to record my truest convictions based on what I know and believe, and my understanding of visions and prophecies, I would say this:

Yes, it's possible I will soon be taken from here physically, a "regular" death; Marilyn will marry Sean, and the Lord will do His work on the farm without me. It's also desirable that I go. I desire it, Sean most certainly does, and so do Marilyn and Lois - yes and no - spirits no, flesh yes. Sean? All of him. However:

The Lord has put us through the fires, as promised, as a general principle of His ways, to save, rebuke, chasten, and transform us to prepare us for what He is about to do in this, His Great Day, His Final Day. He has been purging our company of His rejects and placing the remaining ones, one by one, in their ordained and respective positions. He begins always with the head. On February 6th, He was done this stage of His work of preparation with me.

Marilyn is next, being my wife and called. Convinced she was succeeding with everyone there, she was deceived by Chris and Nathan and thus far, four are gone, as needed and predestined. She is deceived by Sean, who suffers his psychological problems with his mother ("Oedipus complex"?).

Towards me, Sean is unaccepting and unforgiving. I'm only an obstacle. I don't know (assuming this scenario is correct) where we go from here, except now that Sean has declared to me his love for Marilyn, matters will begin to manifest and conclude here soon, God delivering her from her great bitterness toward God and me.

I believe they will be exposed by stepping out in their thoughts on union, expecting, hoping, believing me to die and I won't die. So then, what do they all do? The Lord will purge and cleanse her, according to our requests, so she can also serve Him in purity and chastity.

I believe that Lois will come into respect of God's ways and laws, taking her position at last in submission, without idolizing me, but with respect to what God is truly about and doing by me.

Sean sits in bitterness, fretting against me. He can't get away with it and he won't. He'll be removed, even as he now has recently suspected, with everything in terms of systems and infrastructure presumably in place at the farm. We will see that the Lord provided him to deal with me, Marilyn, and everyone else.

I will see the positioning of all persons, and the Lord will bring whom He pleases. No more will I be at the farm as a laborer or as a supervisor, but as the Lord's servant of all to do His bidding, to serve as "high priest," and to walk with Him before the whole earth in His times and ways.

I believe Paul will return, without Kerri, and eventually with Sierra. Paul will not work on the farm either, but will serve the Lord with me.

There will be hard times to come in 5 years and perhaps sooner (they will begin sooner but effects will be brought to bear upon certain at varied times). These hard times will bring those the Lord chooses (as famine brought Jacob to Egypt). At this moment, I hate the thought of Archie and family returning, but I believe the Lord may do so. How many of his family will come? It doesn't matter; He'll bring whom He chooses.

As the ark was known the world over, so will our farm. I just noticed for the first time that I do not seek or desire such now, whereas I did desire it not so long ago - I only say it because I expect it.

There will be persecution. We corporately are that man child caught up out of harm's way and will be the protected seed for the Lord's imminent purposes. The general Christian world will suffer, yet there will be those who are kept. This is the Day of God's Wrath, the Day of His Coming, and I walk with Him before the earth as per the dream of 1972. That is why all this has happened to us.

Marilyn and Lois will marvel at their delusion, be ashamed, and finally thankful, knowing that God was over all, and that all was needful. The Lord will have delivered us from that *man of sin* within.

Marilyn and Sean will catch themselves at the last, suddenly realizing they were not wrong in simply finding it hard to wait, but wrong altogether. Her "credit" of bitterness, feeling God owes her, will swiftly turn to a great debt. Hardness will turn to brokenness, as did mine. She will be reconciled with me.

But what of Sean? Two possibilities: redemption or rejection. I do wish the former but, as with Paul and Kerri wherein Kerri, a defiled one, could never be there again, so it could be with Sean.

But why should Kerri be counted as the defiled one? Was it not Paul's sin to have married her outside the will of God? Is he not the one that should have known better? Paul is called, and Kerri isn't. The Lord keeps those that are His by His righteousness imputed to them and not by any of their own. It's the same with Marilyn and Sean. It was the same with King Saul and David.

I will not suffer serious physical problems. God has called those off, if they were ever determined for me.

Many will come and be able to rejoice together with us. Imaginations? Dreams? Speculations? Maybe. The visions, dreams, and prophecies support what I believe, except for Marilyn's of September 1996, particularly the literal interpretations she has of them.

As for Bob Gregson's dream, it has come to pass and we will see the working out of it. Didn't his dream chronologically coincide with everything? Didn't I experience the presence of the Lord on that day at the end of the fast? Is that not a death?

I see Marilyn's hardness and know it's impossible to have peace without healing and deliverance.

Sean and Marilyn have "partaken of the forbidden fruit," according to carnal knowledge, and will have their eyes opened. Have they not already been hiding to the extent they've partaken?

I now believe that the serpent also ate the fruit in the Garden of Eden. Here, Sean ate with Marilyn. This partaking of the forbidden fruit is the second time around (Eve having first partaken, Marilyn having already had it in the first Eve - hence the symbolism of dung, that which is passed - in the vision). Sean only partook to join himself to Marilyn for his own benefit. Whereas the serpent tempted and gave the first Eve to eat, now the second Eve causes the serpent to partake, which will be to his downfall.

I once said Sean would expose himself. In the way that he has, Marilyn is pleased. In the way he yet will, she will reevaluate.

I already feel as though I have all returned to me. I also must say I am healed. Things are turning - I can feel it.

There are some interesting parallels indeed between the Eden scene and ours:

Eve was naked; Marilyn was naked in my vision.

Eve was tempted, not Adam; Marilyn was tempted, not I.

The serpent said, "Has God said?" Sean ignores marital, and indeed all, boundaries set by God's Law and me.

Eve sees fruit to make one wise and to be as God, knowing good and evil; Marilyn wants to "hear God's voice." Why? To protect herself, know right from wrong, be in control, and to make her wise.

Why dung? We have all been through it before with Adam and Eve. This is the second time around, but this time, it will be harmless, and not only so, but reversing the curse.

Who enters the scene? Then it was the serpent; now it is Sean.

Who resists God? Then it was the serpent; now Sean resists and resents me and competes with me. Sean says, "I will be as God," as did the serpent seed.

Eve was in natural, garden surroundings; Marilyn sat on a log in a garden. (Jonathan saw a rotting log. The Tree of Knowledge - dead?)

"Two entities vying for power" - the serpent and God; Sean and me; the two natures (flesh and spirit) in me.

Adam let it happen, and so it was required of me.

Eve had her eyes opened unto death, but Marilyn's have been closed, ultimately to life.

Eve went from life to bitterness; Marilyn will go from bitterness to life.

Adam laid his life down to keep his wife, disobeying God. I lay my life down in obedience to God, forsaking my wife. The Lord is the Last Adam, not I, but I walk in Him, fulfilling His will.

The message will go forth that God reigns over all. Lives and not just mouths will preach. God's Spirit will go forth from Zion. The Lord will gather His elect from the four corners of Heaven. The trumpet will sound, a shout will be heard, and the Lord will draw all men to Himself. My warfare is completed. Now I must sit still while the Lord puts all enemies under my feet.

I'm healed throughout. There's nothing to fear. Anger and bitterness are removed. God is about to replenish all that I've lost. There is in the air the scent of a New Day.

Particle - Prophecies for Individuals

At some time between the end of the fast and February 15, 1998, I received these prophecies for the following individuals:

*"Thus says the Lord **to Sean**, by His anointed, the one cast away and the one brought back from the dead as I, Who lives, was dead and am alive forevermore:*

Why do you tempt Me by your stubborn ways and presumptuous? How is it you choose to plot your own course as though you were in My stead? Does it mean nothing to you that you despise My servant and choose to distance yourself from him while becoming intimate with his wife, whom I have given to him? Is it not enough that you despise him? Shall you take his wife also? Is there no fear of God in your eyes according to your words, though even those lack fear and you say so? What shall I do with the man who deliberates to oppose My ways and thoughts and laws?

You have deceived, you have worked wonderfully to that end which I have appointed, as a friend and helper to some, as a tactful enemy to My anointed, from whom I did hide My face for a little while until My wrath was appeased upon him. But now shall it go hard for you because while I sent you but a given distance, you continued farther; where I drew the line and said, 'No further,' you pursued with ambition, saying within yourself, 'I must have what I must have.'

You despise Me in all ways: You commit adultery; you say, 'Cursed is he that comes in the Name of the Lord'; you steal; you covet your neighbor's goods and his wife; you dishonor those whom I have appointed as parents; you dishonor the Sabbath; you take upon yourself My Name in vain. So will you suffer the fruits of iniquity. I will cast you into outer darkness where there is no remedy because you refused My remedies for you and for those whom you have formed a need for remedies. To that end were you called and to that end you answered and served ever so faithfully.

But as for those whom you have abused for your own ends, I will comfort them and be a God to them because they have cried out to Me and turned from their wicked ways, to worship Me in spirit and in truth. I will heal them and restore to them that which was lost and their latter end shall be better than before.

Yet for all that, if you will repent, I will give it to My servant to judge as to what he shall decide for you and your life shall be in his hands whom you despise."

To Lois: *"While you have been persuaded to believe lies for a time and have also been seduced by those who seek their own profit, I will turn you and have mercy upon you because there has been that part in you to comfort and to succour My servant and to have compassion on him in time of need.*

Your temporary hardness and unbelief I have ordained for My purposes, but I will call you, and do even now call you to repentance, and I open your eyes to see that which has been kept from you for a time. It has been in your heart to forsake that which was precious to you for My sake, and I replenish it for you so that you will ever choose that which is good and profitable.

The trial of My servant is at an end and I turn you as I did Job's neighbors to him when I was through with him. In repentance will you come to My servant and he will pray for you. I have not forgotten the good and I pay what I owe."

To Marilyn: *"Surely, you have said many times, 'Well, where's God?' presuming I was with you in all things. But to remove your bitterness have I ordained these last things so that you might*

live and know where I am. Is it not apparent to you that if you were to amass all the armies and resources of earth under your command and if all were to obey you without question or hesitation but with faithfulness and effectiveness, still you could control nothing, not even to make one gray hair on your head black?

Will you continue to resist My will for your life as though you are the wise one? How do you presume to hear My voice and claim to seek all obedience to Me when you despise your head, whom I have placed over you, not according to your liking but according to Mine? And if not according to My liking do you choose, then how is it you want to hear My voice? Shall My voice cover for you where I will not? Shall My voice save you from Me? Must you seek safety from Me? To where will you go and to whom do you flee and hide?

Woman, can a man and a change in your earthly circumstances remove Me? Will I forget? Will I be removed and excluded at long last? Who has yet resisted My will? The enemy has sown tares in your mind and now, in mercy, I send My servants to remove them now that they are come to maturity.

Now, therefore, you will return to your husband, acknowledging that I have done all these things in these last days, with purpose, with mercy, in wisdom which you know little of, but which you have coveted to have for your purposes. Now I will give you the wisdom you need and you will serve Me and not your bitternesses according to your name, because, behold, I have removed them as far as east is from the west.

You shall not any longer say, 'Well, where's the Lord?' but you will hear His voice, saying, 'Here I am,' because you will call on His Name in truth, seeking not your own but Him, and He will speak to you as a father to his daughter, and it will be well for you.'

To Trevor: *"You have desired a wife and a wife you shall have, but of My choosing and not yours. Behold, she is at the door. And you shall serve Me according to My will. I will bring suffering upon you for your sake but know this: Reward will follow if you overcome unto the end with patience. Have faith; it is My good pleasure to give you the Kingdom.*

Minister in your gifts to My faithful ones (they will need you), because I send fire on the earth to subdue the wicked who will resist and who will fight Me by their sight, fighting those I have chosen unto Myself. Permit nothing to come between you and Me and I will keep you, I will bless you and make you a blessing to all those I send you. I have ordained wisdom for you and so shall it be."

To Mark: *"Only I could do for you that which has been done. You have discovered and learned that it is not by your own virtue that you are called or chosen or counted faithful, but by My*

will alone. You have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you and have ordained you to be a burning light to all nations where I bring you.

You needn't be dismayed by what you consider meagre results from speaking to others in My Name nor should you be despondent when they do not heed or understand. I will draw whomsoever I choose, whether for a short time or forever. Yours is to speak and not to strive or convince.

Lift your eyes and you will see that those things you have gazed upon are nothing, but that which you shall gaze upon shall be that which I have purposed and created for My pleasure from the dust of the earth, which you have seen.

The brethren are with you and you have been kept for them so that all are one even though time, distance, culture, climate, occupations, and interests have divided you from one another for a time. In you is the blood, which knows no boundaries but that good unity which I have given to them who love Me."

The following person, Kumiko Konoshita, was an acquaintance of Mark's in Japan, who professed faith in Christ:

To Kumiko: *"In earnestness have you strived for the faith because I have given them to you, both the faith and the earnestness. Do not be afraid of the future or what shall become of this or that. Am I not the God of the future and of all things created? Believe the testimony by the faith I have given you and know that I determine the course of all things and that I determine them for you because I have chosen you and love you. There is nothing I am not aware of and you are not the one who will determine the outcome of anything either in heaven or on earth.*

Choose this day who should determine your destiny, whether it be you or Me. I do not say this because you have a choice, but to consider whom you should choose if you had a choice. Are you greater or wiser than Me? Can you say your short-term perspective choices would be better in the end, that you would be happy with them?

Leave all things in My hands and know this: If at times it should appear that I am not there and that you are abandoned, I should soon show you that I am indeed there, and if you look for Me with all your heart, you will see Me, not as you would expect, but you will see Me, and your heart will rejoice and take courage."

To all those who shall come: *"I have made a sacrifice of a sweet-smelling savour unto Myself and I bring you to dine, to reap where others have sown, to feast where others have served, to rest where others have laboured. I have brought you to laugh for joy where others have wept for sorrow, to enjoy where others have suffered.*

But mind you, you shall not take these things and make light of them. Know your places, for I will not honor those who despise that which I have not lightly esteemed. By fire and blood have these come for My sake, theirs, and yours, and by fire and blood shall you go if you should but ignore that which I have given you freely, but for which has been paid a handsome price.

Freely have you received and freely shall you give, that My house and My city shall be filled with the glory of the Lord and with His people and nations from roundabout. Behold, I do a new thing and shall the earth not know it?"

"For any soul who is not humbled in that same day, he shall be cut off from among his people. And any soul who does any work in that same day, the same soul will I destroy from among his people" (Leviticus 23:29-30 MKJV – a reference to the Day of Atonement).

(I delivered these prophecies to all at the farm on February 22 or 23, 1998.)

Particle - Changes for the Better or the Worse

On February 11, 1998, I recorded the realization of several positive changes for myself. I had no usual leg pains, joint aches, or neck problems. My hair was no longer falling out, I wasn't getting up at night, and my prostate seemed fine. My weight was average.

I was reconciled with my fathers in the flesh.

It seemed the star hitting the earth was fulfilled, in that the earth (the flesh) was no longer in ascendancy, having been overcome by the spirit (the star).

I had better relations with Jonathan, Lois, Trevor, and even Marilyn. Things even seemed better with Sean.

The Lord removed Chris, the troubler, and Nathan, the deceiver.

However, strangely enough, some of my tormenting dreams returned for a short while, one dream being that of expensive tires stolen from my car in a city parking lot, and another where my shoes were missing at a church social.

Particle - Belief and Unbelief

Days later, I was back in the doldrums. What a fine line exists between believing and not believing, between seeing goodness and truth and seeing darkness and desolation! I could step from one world to the next in a second, not even noticing the transition.

Particle - Revelation of Marilyn's God

I just realized something, like a bright light suddenly shone! Marilyn said her desire was to hear the voice of the Lord.

First, I see idolatry. Anything, anything, no matter how good in and of itself, held above the Lord is idolatry.

Second, I see that she wants to hear His voice to be right and in control.

Third, I believe that because of this idolatry there will be confusion in the results.

No wonder she didn't submit all her prophecy for judgment and is prey to delusion; no wonder there's division and strife between us and why we're confounded; no wonder she's so agitated and even furious when questioned or disagreed with. No wonder there's contradiction with the pure Word of God, which is His Voice in Truth.

Particle - Sins of the Flesh and of the Spirit

I believe sons of God are eternally secure as long as we believe and obey. I see that those who are His believe and obey. Though such as Abel, David, Isaac, and Jacob sin, they're kept, but such as Cain, Saul, Ishmael, and Esau aren't.

The difference is that the former sin by the flesh, not being of sin nature, and are therefore automatically, genuinely repentant toward God, but the latter sin by the spirit, being sin nature, and only have guilty consciences, mourning loss, repentant toward themselves, but not toward God. Thus, we have the wheat and tares, those of the right hand and those of the left, vessels of honor and vessels of dishonor.

Particle - The Price of Hatred

Lois called my mother for some reason and received some information. There were two persons in my family who had looked at me with visible hatred, both unwilling to speak to me. One was Uncle Fred Hafichuk, the youngest of my father's siblings, who died in 1994 of prostate cancer. The other was Aunt Lillian Hafichuk, Uncle Ernie's wife, who also died a premature death - likely cancer. Uncle Ernie then decided to be what he had always wanted to be - a Catholic priest.

Lois found out that [Bob Hafichuk](#) had married and was separated. He was a guard at Stony Mountain Penitentiary in Manitoba and led a lonely life with but a dog for a companion.

My mother also told Lois I was weaned at 4 months. This means nothing except that I had a [vision](#) concerning this matter in 1994.

Particle - Dare Speak What I Believe

Ten days after the fast, I honestly expressed to Marilyn what I believed was going on, that I wouldn't die, contrary to her assertion, and that it was wrong of Sean and her to conduct themselves as they did. I believe I also told her what I had received about hearing God's voice being in itself an idol to her.

I wasn't arguing, scolding, criticizing, or trying to convince her, and I didn't say she was wicked. I wasn't striving or sarcastic or even condescending, and I wasn't expecting her to change. But she became so upset she threatened suicide.

I said she was wrong but acknowledged that she may be right. Frankly, I preferred that she would be right because even though I would have to leave Jonathan behind, whom I knew I would see again, I wanted to go very badly.

What hell there was to pay when Marilyn was having her time of the month; at such a time there was no reasoning with or pleasing her. Better to live in a cold barren barn or cave alone until it passed.

I told Marilyn that while there was a semblance of peace at the farm since Chris and Nathan left, there was still something more that needed attention, and that was Sean. I believed he would be one more and perhaps the last to go.

Particle - Paul Confesses

I received a letter from Paul, confessing that he was bitter towards God for not having been given [Sierra Wolfe](#) for a wife, and that he had a hard time making contact with me - a "battle," he called it. It was that bitterness that drove him to quit Davis Business Machines and go wandering, though, at the time, he had given other reasons. I found that I couldn't respond, knowing he had a ways to go before we could get together again.

Particle - Lois Prophecies: Watch, Wait, Trust

On February 19, 1998, Lois had the following prophecy:

"What is going on? This is the question being asked daily of My people. I hear their cry but could not answer because it was not completed. The work that is and has been done is nearing to a close and I will be free to then speak of the wonderful works which I have been preparing for My saints. My silence has been for your protection and your strength.

Behold, I come quickly, and I will minister to you all. Watch and wait and do not despair. Put your trust in Me. In My written Word, it is said that I go to prepare a place for you, that where I am you may be also. I have prepared a place for you and it will be revealed shortly. Again I say, watch and wait; do not despair."

Particle - Don't Try to Understand

On so many occasions, the Lord admonished us to cease trying to understand what was going on. Everything was so strange, so bizarre, even evidently wrong and out of order, if not devilish, yet we were all given a hint of understanding that something was being worked out in ways we couldn't begin to comprehend. In judging after the appearance, we would bring untold anxiety and suffering upon ourselves. Indeed, it often happened.

Particle - The Lord Speaks and Comforts Me

I talked to Mark, who came from Japan temporarily to "see me off"; I tried sharing what I believed was happening. There was no reception.

Seeing he had some experience with lathes and woodworking, I told him of a used lathe I nearly bought from a private party but didn't, trying to get it for less. Mark said the chisels alone were

worth the whole asking price. I felt terrible (there was covetousness rearing its ugly head again), not because I had been chintzy, but because I didn't get the goods.

I wanted to talk to someone. I tried to comfort myself with Jonathan, but he had other interests and playmates. There was nobody. I felt so sad and alone that I wept. Then the Lord spoke:

"Why are you crying? So you lost a lathe. So your boy is selfish. All children are selfish. Do you not have everything you need? Were you not selfish with Me all these years? Didn't you grow up finally to appreciate Me? Didn't it all take time and suffering? And you're afraid your son must suffer. He'll never be kind to or considerate of anyone, and he will never love you as you would wish, as I have desired of you, unless he suffers.

So, as a physician performs an operation or dispenses bitter medicine to correct a problem, so must I with Jonathan. And as a cancer removed is something for which to be thankful, so will you be thankful when I am done. Be patient, consider your benefits, and be thankful. You have nothing to cry about.

Mark walks away acting superior, seeing your weaknesses; he has and will open his mouth about these things. He too is young and cocky and he too will be dealt with. I take care of all necessities, the proud and self-sufficient or satisfied I abase and humble.

*What can you do? Haven't you tried? Haven't you failed? Is there any other choice but to leave everything in My hands? Son, relax and enjoy. I'll give you a lathe, a gas stove, a plane, a city, a country, a continent, the earth! I've done it. Believe Me, it's **all** yours, all things."*

Lois called immediately after and said all children were as Jonathan was with me. This was an unexpected confirmation of part of what I had just heard.

Particle - Lois Seeing

As Lois pondered what she should be seeing, the Lord promised her He would show her. Marilyn agreed that Lois heard from the Lord, but didn't expect He would show her what I was expecting her to see.

The next day, Lois called to tell me she was seeing things. She saw that Sean is not after the Lord, but only after power - over the farm, over Marilyn, and over me. We talked, and I could not help sharing with her what I saw and believed.

Mark was also resisting Marilyn's prophecies. He didn't like what he saw with the way Sean and Marilyn were carrying on with each other, though he acknowledged he could be wrong.

I recalled the duties of a watchman. He must blow the trumpet with no uncertain sound. So far, I've been uncertain, not only wondering if I was wrong, but even believing Marilyn. Now comes the time of believing the Lord and sounding the warning trumpet certainly.

It occurred to me that Marilyn's prophecy had come to pass. I died, and she did marry Sean. The final thing was for me to believe that I now had the *"ministry like that of Moses"* as Marilyn prophesied. I began to consider asking Marilyn for a divorce. The situation was looking unresolvable with irreconcilable differences.

Particle - The Work and Worth of a Watchman

Lois had once received a [vision](#) of my being a watchman on fortress walls. I too received that I was a watchman for the others. These are the elements of a watchman's responsibilities:

- 1) He is alone.
- 2) He can feel like he's doing nothing while everyone else is busy.
- 3) He can't be involved in any of their activities.
- 4) He can't even watch them or be preoccupied.
- 5) He must face outwardly to where the enemy may approach.
- 6) The whole city or garrison can perish if he doesn't do his job.
- 7) The watchman deserves to die if he doesn't do his part.

Particle - Sean's Sentiments

When Mark left the farm to come and visit me at my home for a day or two, Sean complained that he felt shortchanged. He had told Mark that the sooner I was gone, the better. Sean chafed when Marilyn asked Mark questions about farm business. When Lois told Sean Marilyn had a right to know as owner, being responsible to me for her duties there, he responded, "I totally disagree, case closed! I don't want to talk about it anymore!"

Sean reminded me of the keepers of the vineyard of Luke 20, who rejected and abused the owner's servants and finally killed the owner's son when he was sent to collect the fruits. I'm reminded of Jesus' words, **"You shall see Me no more henceforth, until you shall say, 'Blessed is he who comes in the Name of the Lord,'" and, "He that receives you, receives Me, and he that rejects you rejects Me."** Was Sean not conducting himself in a manner that these words condemn? Surely. If we were the Lord's, could he escape consequences with such an attitude?

Particle - Delivery of Prophecies to Farm

On February 23, 1998, I delivered the lengthy [prophecies](#) I had for each of the people there. Marilyn insisted on it when she found out about them, though I didn't tell her what they were.

We prayed, talked, and had great struggles. I wondered if I had heard correctly from the Lord. The next day, we were on the phone with Sean, Mark, and Lois. I told Mark to tell everyone else that I stood on those prophecies, right or wrong.

Sean confessed sexual thoughts concerning Marilyn, yet justified himself in having them, in light of her prophecy and their convictions, as though he had a right to those thoughts because "she was his wife." But, then, why confess?

Marilyn began to confess her feelings of bitterness towards God and me. She spoke of having wanted to see her mother and was very angry at me that I had cut things off between them. Lois felt that Marilyn and Jonathan should go and see her mother. I agreed to it. Then when I said I was beginning to see these prophecies with Trevor, Sean, and Lois being fulfilled, Marilyn became angry and retreated.

Particle - Spiritual Attacks

Each of them soon reported spiritual attacks at the farm house - Lois, Marilyn, and Sean once each, and Mark twice. In the Name of the Lord, I came against the spirits. Though the attacks subsided considerably, they didn't cease entirely.

Particle - Our Responsibilities

Marilyn and I had prayer and a talk in the middle of the night. In conclusion:

- 1) Marilyn was responsible for the operation of the farm;
- 2) I was separated unto the Lord as priest and prophet;
- 3) We were all to wait on the Lord;
- 4) We were to go about our business in our respective duties;
- 5) We were to mind only what we know and to refrain from trying to understand what is happening with us. Many times we were told this.
- 6) As Samuel had no business helping in the war with the Philistines, and Saul had no business offering up sacrifice, presuming to perform Samuel's duties, so we are to each mind our own business and not despise one another's positions. Obeying, there would be order and harmony; disregarding these principles, there would be chaos and confusion.

Particle - Paul and Kerri Reunited

Kerri called about a commercial dough mixer we had, which she wanted to use in the tiny bakery and café she was developing in Great Falls called "Neighbors." She revealed that she and Paul were together again. Paul had written me asking what I meant about fornication in their relationship as a married couple, but he didn't tell me they were reunited. Kerri insisted they were man and wife. I had nothing to say to them and wasn't interested in making anything happen. Instead of divorcing Kerri, Paul was divorcing the Lord, those at the farm, and me.

Particle - Vision: Transplanted Tree

On March 3, 1998, I had a vision. I saw a tree spade with a large tree in it, about three or four feet off the ground, in the process of being moved for transplanting. One of the main taproots had been severed. It seemed like a death, and certainly was a shock to the tree as it was taken out of its established and comfortable elements to new and strange circumstances. I knew I was that tree, and it had happened.

This was not a case of the tree dying, but of being moved. It was not an uprooting, but a transplanting. However, a transplantation can be like death - shocking, possibly some main roots severed, the tree made subject to a new environment and set back for a time.

Particle - Marilyn's Vision: Hammer Shattering a Rock

While Sean's father, Bob Fife, visited with us at the farm on March 3, 1998, Marilyn had to break out and tell him he didn't have the Spirit of God and therefore couldn't comprehend what was going on with us. Bob was somewhat offended. At that time, she had a vision, wherein she hit a rock with a hammer. It had been hit in the right place; however, it remained unchanged for moments before shattering in many pieces.

I didn't know what to make of things Marilyn was seeing, feeling, and speaking as though of the Lord. I was learning to be skeptical. Of Bob Fife at that time, I heard these strangest of words, *"He is a damn good churchman."*

What is one to make of such words that seem so profane, coming from the Lord?

Particle - A Double Death in the Night

On the morning of March 4th, after 4 AM, it seemed like my life system shut down as I lay in bed, and I began to float downward into darkness and oblivion. I said, "This is it!" I thought of the Lord and my first reaction was to begin to thank Him, but with some effort and apprehension. It didn't seem as just a "twinkle" - as Marilyn described it would be - as a drop of water in a hot flame. Then I wondered, "What about Jonathan here at home without Marilyn?" He was with me while she was at the farm. "What happens to him if I die while he's alone with me?"

I was conscious, but my whole body seemed to shut down. I began to slowly float downward like a balloon settling on the floor. From a standing position, my legs had come up at first until I was horizontal. Though I was physically laying down, spiritually it seemed I wasn't. All sound also faded out, as when one is immersed in water.

It seemed that for a few seconds, I was dead, but then I revived. A while later, the same thing happened again. Even oblivion felt good. But how can oblivion feel good without consciousness? It was mysterious, somewhat scary and sad.

I calculated that this happened 40 days from the time Dad and Uncle appeared to me, asking my forgiveness. Did I experience a death for them in proxy or as a substitute in Christ for each of them? It did happen twice and it was connected to their appearance by the 40 days. There are things happening in the spiritual realm we have no clue about, being totally beyond our understanding.

Particle - Gideon's Three Hundred

I was constantly struggling with dependence on people rather than looking to the Lord as our Source. Yet each time someone left, like Cathie, then Archie, Ben and Erin, then Danny, hired hand Hugh Lumley, then Paul and Kerri, and finally Chris and Nathan, things only got better. Who could have imagined? How could one person do the work of three? But it was always better and the work wasn't cut back; instead, there was frequently more added. Now I was struggling with the possible loss of one more person, the alleged manager, no less. How could we possibly manage if he left?

Particle - The Last of the Stronghold

Sean did the books, supervised all departments and activities, worked in all areas, and was involved in all of the decisions in consultation with Marilyn. While she was supposed to have the authority, he sought and succeeded to have the final word. Furthermore, the thought of Sean's leaving was unimaginable to her. As far as she was concerned, if he left, the farm was done for.

But Sean continued to be that selfish, miserable, self-centered wretch, wanting all attention, respect, preeminence, and power. Lois had a description of his attitude speaking in these words: "You do as I say and I'll do as I please."

Notwithstanding his conduct and attitude, I was afraid that if he were to leave, all would be lost. I couldn't see anyone else taking charge. In that kind of thinking and fear, I was ever reticent to confront or correct Sean in any way. At the same time, the predominant fact (and command) was that I was to leave the affairs to Marilyn and him. I had to *let it all happen*.

"Today, Lord, I release myself of Sean. If You will, take him and remove him quickly. Please forgive us for setting him up as indispensable. Forgive us, Father. Let the farm go, if need be, but don't let our souls go. We have looked to man. No More."

Particle - Lois' Two Visions of Sean

Lois had two visions of Sean. In the first, she saw him sitting on a throne with unkempt robe and a crown askew on his head. He had an arrogant, silly look on his face. It was the vision of a fool.

In the second, he was on a throne that was tottering side to side. An eagle sat on one side of the back of it, calmly watching. Suddenly, Sean got up and ran away.

Particle - Prepare For Battle

"Blood, fire, and smoke mingle... it is war, war such as never was nor will ever be again. Woe to the earthly inhabitant! It is a day of great tribulation, sorrow, and pain - the pains of the forthcoming of a new creation! What a turbulent, convulsive time this is... short in duration, but great in intensity. Blessed are those who endure unto the end, because few they be and powerless in themselves to prevail. Many are the casualties, never to rise again, except the Lord should raise them up.

The day of rest comes with the most pain and trouble of all. Feet stamping, swords flashing, shields smashing, teeth gnashing, for very life they fight to the death - this is that war, that great, great war to determine all things. Down is the enemy cast forth from the presence and throne of God. Usurpers are found out, exposed, and with violence thrust out to regions below where they belong, but even there for but a short duration because enemies will be forbidden to dwell anywhere.

The besom of destruction will sweep away every lie, every unclean thing. There will not be one stone left unturned, or one crack ignored or overlooked, as the Lord purges all to make an end of all evil, of every particle of leaven that could defile.

In the days of Noah, Ham remained; in the days of David, Absalom remained; in the days of Solomon, desire remained to pollute and defile; but in this Last, Great Day, no evil will remain. The wolf will eat grass, the lion will lie down, yes, has lain down, with the lamb, and in all of the land of the Lord, in all His holy mountain, there will be no more fear of evil near at hand or from within.

The Lord will seize the scepters from out of the hands of the shameful, the mockers, the usurpers, the vain, and the proud, and will clothe the humble and faithful with the robes of those that rule. Glory shall be upon the heads of the righteous and faithful, their faces shining with the oil of God and with His joy, no more to be stained with tears of sorrow and sweat of turmoil and toil.

Blessed be the Name of Jesus and blessed be the names of those He dispatches for the judgment and good of the nations everywhere. He who rejects that emissary of God curses himself and banishes himself to everlasting fire prepared for fools and adversaries.

Why do devils mock and fools take no heed? Because they will not see beyond themselves, being a law unto themselves, limiting the Holy One, Who conceals Himself from the unbelieving, the boastful, the resisters.

As a shepherd divides the sheep from the goats, so the Lord divides the submissive from the resistive. Who has seen the Lord? Who can say what He does or what He is like? Those who deny themselves and strive for peace, those who lie down to the evil, baring their backs to the smiters, those who do not resist the chastening rod, these are the ones who see the Lord. The saints of the Lord say, 'Thy will, not mine be done,' and devils say, as they battle against Michael and angels, 'My will, not yours be done.'

Devils choose to rule, to ascribe wisdom to themselves, to be served, honored, and glorified. They wish nothing but to reign – to reign is their desire, their goal, their motivation for all they do and say.

The righteous seek to be ruled, ascribing wisdom to God. The former have their thrones forbidden, but the righteous reign with the Lord of lords, acknowledging that He alone is worthy and not they.

Persevere, all you who trust in the Lord, and know He is faithful and able to save to the uttermost, which only He can. Is anything too hard for the Lord? Has He not created all things? Is anything in His creation out of His control? Is there a higher power than He? Though the sky flees and the earth is removed, still He sends His angels to deliver and sustain those who are His, those He chooses to keep.

Yes, there is sorrow for the chastened, suffering for those who hunger and thirst after righteousness. Their consciences are pained and exercised so that all endurance must be summoned. The rebellious reject out of hand any and all things that are an offense to, and out of keeping with, their desires; they see their desire in the short term, despising patience; they look

at the outward, scorning faith; to them, gain is godliness. The righteous are given to lose not so that they might gain for themselves only, but that good may come and the will of God be done.

Come out of your prisons, you captives! Is it not the time of your release? Is this not the day that the Lord has made? Is this not the day of His crowning? Shall He not show mercy on This, His Great Day of Glory? Surely! Can He celebrate victory while His own are bound and imprisoned? But the day of His rejoicing is also the day for yours and not only of rejoicing but reward, redemption.

Freedom alone is not enough, but there is a purpose for the freedom, which is unveiled for all of creation's benefit and redemption. Your honor shall be according to the honor of the Lord. Those who honor Him shall be honored; those who dishonor Him shall be dishonored.

Blast the trumpets! Let their sounds resound throughout the earth, beginning at Lethbridge. Now has the foundation been laid, the battle lines have been drawn, the enemies have been notified. The enemies have also prepared for battle, their foundations laid and preparations made. They come with hissing and great vehemence; their intent to destroy utterly all things pertaining to you, including you.

Never have preparations been made for such a great battle now set in array. The enemy is eager to destroy; it is in their nature to destroy and in their nature to destroy you in particular. But as the enemies choose and desire, so will it be to them and more. I, the Lord, will fight for you and in your stead. It is My pleasure to do away with My enemies and yours at long last.

Break forth into singing and rejoicing, all you lands in bondage. Redemption at the hands of the sons of God, My sons, is here. Already the Word goes forth from Lethbridge to prevail to the uttermost, accomplishing all it was sent forth to do. This is My Day, your Day, the Day of Power, wherein the Kingdom of Heaven is established in the earth. Fire and blood and smoke mingle, but a river of life springs forth to water a dry and parched land, and all its inhabitants. This is the Year of Redemption."

Particle - Gains and Losses

I can count many losses financially, but I seldom count the gains. I focus on what has been taken, not on what has been given me. I can be given a million dollars, have ten stolen from me, and fret about what was stolen. We need to learn to count our blessings. Why do we need to learn to count our blessings while mourning our losses comes naturally, without any practice? The flesh can't be satisfied or pacified any more than a bottomless bucket can be filled.

I'm bitter toward Marilyn and Sean, but have You not done these things, Lord? Have You not taken my wife and given her to another? Shall I complain or be bitter? If I'm bitter, then it's toward You. You've commanded that I let things happen, but in my attitude, I haven't done so, obviously... and I can't.

Do You want me to smile and jump up and down with joy, crying jubilantly, “My wife has been given to another man who despises me!”? My wife flaunts her love for him in my face and he has love of her before me, and I’m to sing for joy? My wife says I should have no problem with that because You’ve done it. When the lash comes on my back, shall I smile?

Particle - Another Downer Day, but Why?

I’m bitter, yes, bitter. Mutuals, thieves, raw deals, cheats, losses, hurts, errors, failures, destruction, weaknesses, isolation, betrayal; yes, I’m bitter.

Promises, promises - carrots dangling, disappointment, hope after hope dashed, mirages, empty clouds.

Tests - I fail every time, accompanied with egg on my face, delusion, disillusion, defeat, shame, humiliation, false hopes - more trials, more evil, more sadness, despair, depression, strife, listlessness, and disunity.

Hell and death, anguish, fear, worries, regret, ignorance, foolishness, darkness, guessing, foolish imaginations, vain hopes, stupidity, damnation, curses, hatred, pressure.

Faults, sins, and bad habits remain; sorrow and sorrow again; void of pleasure and full of pain.

A man can be so rich and yet so poor. I don’t want to be anything anymore.

Yesterday I saw what I’ve been verbalizing for many years - that we try and try to be good, right, and righteous, and fail miserably. I see that we are meant to try and fail. I’ve done what was meant - to try and fail; but why?

God, I’m bitter toward You and You’ll condemn me for it. Why not? I recognize that I’ve lived for 26 years or more, trying to be right, succeed, know what is what, and prosper by it... all in vain. I am *shit*.

Yet, there’s something there - the man of faith - whatever. I never or seldom see him. Mostly, I see this other bugger, who does anything he pleases and cannot help but do evil. God, I murmur.

Marilyn and I both felt terrible. I asked the Lord to open my eyes. Then Lois called, and she and Marilyn were talking, speculating, introspecting, analyzing, and worrying. Lois in particular was trying to dig things up to feed her addiction for excitement and sensationalism. I called them back, rebuking and admonishing them to stop it all and obey the Lord Who said: *“Go about your business, stop figuring things out, don’t judge after the appearance, put away the old, and damn your self-analysis and introspection.”*

That settled it. He answered my prayer, opening my eyes. The troubling and desolation immediately disappeared for both Marilyn and me.

Particle - Trevor Has a Word from the Lord

On March 10, 1998, I received two things:

One, that Trevor would be receiving a significant and wonderful revelation soon; and two, that Sean would be struggling, perceiving that he wasn't going to receive that which he had been waiting, hoping, and striving for - me out of the way with him in control and authority over everything. Even now, he struggled with the thought of my not dying as Marilyn has prophesied I would.

Then Trevor called, saying he received that March 18th was the end of the old and March 28th was the beginning of the new. He said that I would be able to move freely, not bound or limited by time or space, appearing and disappearing at will, anywhere, with anyone, instantly. I expect he didn't take the prophecy literally; it was figurative.

I told Marilyn her prophecy of my death wouldn't be fulfilled physically and that Trevor's prophecy agreed with what I was saying. She didn't believe me. What Trevor didn't know (nor did anyone else) was the year of his prophecy. When the immediate 18th and the 28th came, there was nothing noticeable or significant that I could tell. However, the matter of time and space was manifesting itself, as one will see.

Particle - Frank Talk with Kerri

Kerri called, confessing she hated Lois and Sean, though not with repentance. She also had criticisms of Paul, saying he had said many foolish things. He and she were together again.

I rebuked her, and I let Paul have it in her ears, as well. I told her they were contrary to God and His authorities, murmuring and backbiting. I said that she was fork-tongued and that Paul was incapable of almost anything, including wiping his own nose.

Frankly, as I understood it, his ways stank, and unless he repented of them, there was no way I would ever want to have anything more to do with him.

Particle - Debate about Me in Heaven

On the night of March 15, 1998, I dreamt there was a debate among some persons as to what to do about my carnal man or me - to change me and keep me in this world, or to take me and change me in the next. I was objectively involved in this discussion. It was business-like, not emotional or negative, much like I feel the discussion on the mount of transfiguration was between Moses, Elijah, and Jesus, wherein they discussed His appointment at Jerusalem. This discussion about my fate seemed to be a dream, yet not.

Immediately after this, I dreamt that Chris and Nathan had returned to the farm, presumptuously, expecting me to receive them back gladly, which I did not. Chris was agitated, fretful, and angry at my reaction.

After this dream, two things came to me: 1) We were trying to get people to accept the true value of food against the present tide. We must wait for the Lord to change things and not expect an immediate payoff. 2) We were trying to find ways to deal with governmental oppression, taxes, and regulations, etc. I knew we needed to comply and the Lord would compensate and protect us.

Particle - Jonathan's Vision: I Bowing

Jonathan had a vision of me at about 1 p.m. on March 15th during his naptime. The scene was one fully white with light, except for me. I was bowing from the waist, but Jonathan couldn't see to whom.

This vision seemed related to the dream I had the night before. The interpretation I had was that I was honoring the Truth, the Lord.

Particle - Vision: Food Problem Brought to the Lord

On March 17, 1998, I had this vision: As a boy, I was bringing my food problem like an object in my hand to my Father (the Lord), knowing that He would take care of it for me. He took me instead, and that automatically solved the problem. He was seated, tall, and lanky; I, the boy, was also lanky, somewhat like Jonathan, only a bit older. Jonathan was going on seven at the time.

Particle - Freed from Fear of Authorities

Forty days after my 10-day fast, on March 18, 1998, Marilyn confronted me on my fears of governmental authorities. I had read an article in a farm magazine about unreasonable government regulations and was disturbed. At first, I was upset at Marilyn, but then we prayed and I confessed the fear. I believe it went back to my childhood days when [Cy Puls](#), the health inspector for our dairy operation, visited our farm. I also recall when [Revenue Canada](#) sent the young zealot to strike me with fear over an error H&R Block made in my returns in 1972.

My fear was not so much of punishment for wrongdoing, as of injustice, tyranny, and oppression from those in power, be they civil servants, lawyers, law enforcement, medical system, the religious, or any other persons or groups who had official or unofficial powers to exercise as they chose, while I was helpless to do anything.

It hadn't occurred to me that the fault was with me in that I feared. It doesn't matter if the authorities are right or wrong; I needn't fear. Is God not the Ultimate Authority? Jesus said, "All power and authority has been given Me in Heaven and earth...." How is it I should fear if the earth is my footstool as I reign with Jesus Christ on His throne?

On this very day of my deliverance from that fear, Revenue Canada called to cancel and refund penalties and approve our books. Sean had erred, we were penalized, I appealed, and they reversed their decision - all on this very day!

Who says there is no God?

Particle - The Break

Ever since [Ernie Chadwick](#) related his vision in 1976 and prophesied to me of a break coming in my life saying I was not to fear, I often thought I had experienced the fulfillment of his vision.

When Mickey and Lynn left us later in **1976** and we [uprooted to Dauphin](#), I thought that was the break Ernie had spoken of.

When we sold all that we had and were [taken to Israel](#) in **1979**, I thought again it was the break prophesied.

When we were suddenly [forced out of Winnipeg](#) in **1981** when Paul's parents came after us, I thought it was that break.

When the handyman business was [cut short](#) in **1983**, and we were to flee to the US, it seemed to be the break.

When [business consulting](#) stopped suddenly in **1984**, soon followed by a cry for help from [Delores and Lois](#) for spiritual ministry, I thought it was the prophesied break.

When the [Moon River Estates executive](#) "killed" us on November 10, **1989**, and we were much alone, I again believed it to be that break.

When we abruptly [pulled out of the stock market](#) in **1995**, apparently prematurely, and put our savings in [the farm](#), before the promise of God was fulfilled in terms of [quadrupling our investment](#), I thought surely it was now the break. It certainly was a strange and disconcerting situation, pulling out just as we were beginning to recuperate losses.

Seven uprootings in all.

Only months before this point in 1998, I experienced peace for the first time over quitting the mutual investments as a loser, for I recalled Ernie's vision and prophecy, seeing how applicable it was.

Each of these events seemed to indicate a breaking in me by trying circumstances, as Ernie described. Perhaps God had spoken of a life of experiencing many such events and not just one. But now something began to crystallize for me. I had never experienced anything like what was upon me.

Now I had to sit, let things I found very unpleasant happen, and wait; that was how the Lord was going to break me, as [Mickey prophesied](#). I had not sat waiting in any of those situations, not one.

The other major difference was that in all those cases, the emphasis was more on our circumstances being broken up than on **my** being broken. Those seemed more external than internal. Now I was faced with an inner breaking. While the effect of those events would come and go, build and wear off, now something deeper was in operation, something permanent.

I came to perceive that Ernie and Mickey were speaking of the same break that [Don Morrison](#) and [Theo](#) spoke of, a singular event of great significance. I would know for sure. Four prophets, all speaking the same thing in the same year (1976), each of them entirely independent of each other.

Particle - Tongues of Angels

On the morning of March 19th, I awoke praising the Lord in tongues and in English, being thankful. I then began describing angels in these words: powerful, flawless in character, noble, great, lofty, selfless, superior, magnanimous, excellent, intelligent, moral, virtuous, incorruptible, just, trustworthy, dedicated, utterly committed, sober, and determined to fulfill their duties.

They **love**. I had never thought of angels as persons who love, who care. They are all about us, caring in ever uncompromising attentiveness and vigilance. Their entire being is totally devoted to God. What is important to Him is important to them and vice versa.

People everywhere in the world search for heroes, someone they can look up to, trust, enjoy the company of, and depend upon for anything. They look for friends who have the characteristics or personality features of angels, though they don't realize that angels are the essence of what they seek.

Angels aren't physical creatures - they are spirits. One may think they are unisexual, and Jesus said they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but they are always recorded in Scripture as men, never as women. However, I would meet an angel, and it would not be as I expected.

Neither Marilyn nor Lois could receive what I had to say about angels. Why?

If angels are as described, why is it said that we, the saints, would judge them? It doesn't sound like they would need any judging, and certainly not by us who slog through the fleshly mire until given victory. But the saints in this world will be completed in the Perfection of God, in His image. And if the Son of Man needed to learn obedience by the things He suffered, though sinless, how shall angels not be taught, supervised, directed, corrected, and disciplined?

Particle - Protracted Protest

That morning, a protest continued within me about Marilyn and Sean. I thought of them as in adultery. Sean wanted to get reconciled with me while retaining his "right" to Marilyn as his wife. He expected me to live in peace with them while all that continued? Wasn't it just a little too much to ask? Men normally shoot those who tamper with their wives, but I was expected to be this smiling, benevolent, fatherly fool, who decides to eat her shit with them and say, "My, isn't this good! Can I ask you for the recipe?"

I thought to myself, "In her spirit, she serves God and is my faithful wife, but in the flesh she goes whoring, bitter toward, and despising me." Then I think, "Are we not all that way, having both flesh and spirit - in the one, serving the Law of God, but in the other, the law of sin (Romans 7:25)? So how can I criticize?"

But another thought now entered in: We are not to walk in the flesh, as do Sean and Marilyn. That's the difference. The difference is not the potentiality in us, but the choice we make.

Now, I asked, "Why do they choose this? Is it God punishing or stripping me? If the latter, how long will it last? Will I die as they wish, or will all this finally come to an end, according to my prophecies?"

But I again recalled: 1) God is in full control; 2) He told me to let it all happen; 3) we are not to judge after the appearance; 4) we weren't to try and figure it all out; and 5) I was to wait patiently for the Lord and give thanks. Hadn't He been doing things for me? Surely.

Now Lois forgot all that she saw and once more put her full support behind Marilyn. I could say and do nothing. But I had to remain steadfast; the promise was sure and the outcome victorious, not for sin or for the enemy, but for *me*.

Particle - Afraid of Archie

Lois called to warn me of Archie. They heard that he was in town. Would he be the instrument of my demise?

Where would I go? What could I do? Hide? Where and for how long? No, I believed the Lord would have to take care of this one, as He had done before, if He so willed. And if Archie did attack, it would be on a spiritual level, and there, too, the Lord would have to defend and keep me. What could I do? I prayed and received that he would be no threat.

Particle - The Fear of Overpricing Sales Goods

Another fear I recognized and which I believed came from the Bay retail years in Winnipeg was of pricing product too high and being left with inventory. I'd had a fear of competitors out-pricing and out-marketing me, leaving me with deteriorating stocks and social stigma.

At the same time, I didn't want to price our farm goods at less than they were worth and for so little that it placed us on the poverty level with all the other farmers who are constantly compelled by the system to give their produce away.

Particle - Failing Farmers Fighting in Futility with Foolishness

Governments and multinational corporations (particularly those in the food, chemical, and agricultural industries) are destroying the livelihood of small farmers and the beneficial contributions they can make to their communities.

Think about it: Many farmers fail to make ends meet so they must work off the farm to survive. I recall Social Studies classes in the fifties wherein we were taught that the early French settlers to Canada in the 1600's were granted two or three acres per family of land along the St. Lawrence River. They were expected to make a decent living off their plots. Today, farmers fail with several sections of land (1000's of acres) and must be subsidized by the government.

As an organic farmer, seeing the plight of farmers all around us, I was determined from the outset that unless we received a fair return for our labors, we wouldn't produce anything. I would refuse to sell in desperation at sacrifice prices, while those buying from us would be receiving fair, if not **exorbitant**, pay for their labors in their occupations.

I say "exorbitant" because while farmers ideally produce basic necessities of life, there are many people that produce far less important products and services for far more pay.

Examples are numerous - sports, entertainment, currency trading and speculation, stock trade, insurance, arms trade, conventional medicine and pharmaceuticals, tourism, religion, politics, law, real estate, and governmental bureaucracies, to name some significant, legal, but often immoral, enterprises, each a subject in itself to discuss.

Farmers are at the bottom of the food chain; they take risks as few others and often work longer hours with greater dangers. Farmers are often socially and economically taken for granted, if not despised. Yet let society try to do without them.

In defeat, competing with each other at farmers' markets and markets of every kind around the world, they are coerced into yielding their hard-earned products for unfair prices. With vain hopes and wishful thinking, farmers helplessly sell their produce below cost to avoid total loss.

I vowed I wouldn't permit ourselves to fall into that trap. I also promised myself we would do what we could to encourage farmers to farm wholesomely and to steadfastly reach for just rewards.

Two great names in the cause of good farming and healthy food production are Michael Pollan and Joel Salatin. A good book to give you an idea of the challenges, defeats, and victories of organic farming is *Turn Here Sweet Corn* by Atina Diffley. My hat off to excellent farmers Martin and Atina, and Joel. Look them up - their books are worth buying.

Particle - Life in the Hereafter

I was reading in Genesis 48:5 where Jacob was about to die. He told his son, Joseph, that just as Reuben and Simeon were his sons directly, so Joseph's two sons (Jacob's grandsons) would be Jacob's, as well. What was the point of Jacob having two more young sons, when he was about to die?

Furthermore, Jacob made Joseph solemnly promise that when the day came that God would visit them in Egypt after his death, they were to remove his bones with them (Genesis 49:29-30). Why?

Jacob knew that physical death was not the end-all.

Particle - Paul's Expressed Desire

On March 25, 1998, after having some turmoil and questions, I spoke within me to Paul, saying, "Paul, get out of there! Choose! Get with it! Come on!"

A few minutes later, he called and said several things: 1) He sensed Kerri was bad for him; 2) he had been bitter toward me for telling them their marriage was a good thing and following through on that basis; 3) he knew he had to come to this conclusion of Kerri and the marriage on his own; 4) the Word of the Lord through Kerri, saying the Lord [required my life](#) (when I asked Him what He required of me), was related to February 6th when I said to the Lord, "I will serve in my infirmities," to which the Lord replied, *"That is what I've been waiting to hear."*

I then thought of Trevor's prophecy, in which he said I would not be limited by time and space.

It turned out that Paul was unexpectedly coming to Lethbridge with Jim Barngrover, an organic farmer and commodities broker, who would be passing through and decided to visit our farm and give us some advice.

I asked Paul what his heart's desire was. Thinking briefly on it, he replied that he wanted to be free to come and go and interact with people, not just in business, but in personal and spiritual matters - being alive and involved instead of living separately within, which he knew to be death, not life. I was glad to hear it.

Particle - Visions and Prophecies on the Fiftieth Day

On March 28, 1998, the 50th day since February 6th, Lois had a vision of Paul with hands upraised, happy, worshipping the Lord.

Jonathan then said, "Dad, I just had a vision - an explosion. I saw the ground exploding."

Particle - The Lord Reigns in Heaven over All

This day, I received that the predominant message we would be taking to the world, generally speaking, was that *the Lord reigns in Heaven over all*. God is in full control; He is Sovereign, Lord of lords.

As Paul and I prayed together, I asked the Lord for His counsel as to what to do. Paul had these words for me: *“Go in your strength. Believe My words to you, but if not the words, then believe Me for My works’ sake (what I have done for you).”*

Particle - Talks with Vicky Overbeek

Our neighbor, Vicky Overbeek, didn’t read the [letters](#) I wrote them on spiritual matters and neither did her husband, Casey, but Vicky did seem somewhat open to talk.

Casey was a principal owner in a company, Silver Ridge Construction. I believe they could have done well, but Casey wasn’t about to listen to what I had to say, and he told me so. When talking to Vicky, I discovered Silver Ridge wasn’t doing well. If people would only humble themselves and listen! Those in most need to hear are the most reluctant to listen. Isn’t that why they’re in such need?

Particle - The Troublesome Threesome

In the past few weeks, Sean had spoken of wanting to see restored the relationship he and I had when we first met, which he had lost. I asked him what he wanted more - a relationship with me or my wife and possessions - he couldn’t have both. He would have to choose.

Let the nature of my relationship with Marilyn shed some light here as to the difficulty of our situation in determining a course of action between us. A couple nights before, I had a dream that a woman came up to me and put her arm around my waist. It felt so good.

Marilyn and I had similar dreams. It seemed we were like horses that are found chewing the fence posts and wooden rails of their corrals, trying to alleviate some need or craving. I would have liked to have a wife (if a wife at all) who loved me, and she, a husband who loved her. She said she experienced that with Sean. I believed that if the Lord didn’t do something like take me, then we should divorce if such feelings continued.

But the Lord was not taking me, none of us was changing, and so divorce was the only alternative I could see. I didn’t see it as right to go on this way - having a relationship that lacked emotional fulfillment. She didn’t love me and never had; she told me so. She also told me she loved Sean and got from him what she lacked. He said that he loved her.

The day before, Marilyn told Sean there would be no reconciliation between him and me and asked him if he could live with that. He readily said he could.

Particle - Declaring My Position

The next day, I went to the farm and told everyone where I stood. I said I didn’t believe in the literal fulfillment of Marilyn’s prophecy. I asked Sean to make his choice considering the same.

I told them I believed the Lord, telling me that as Aaron was given to Moses, so Paul was given to me and would serve with me as spokesperson to the world. However, I saw Paul presently as more into works than faith and dependent on my oil (my faith and spiritual strength) rather than having

his own. Mark received a prophecy concerning Paul that *“the time was not yet,”* and that Paul was *“overconfident.”*

Particle - Archie Haunts Me

So often I wanted to communicate with Archie, to see that things were made right between us. I wanted to see good things for all of them. In him was fulfilled the proverb:

“A brother offended is like a strong city; and their disagreements are like the bars of a fortress” (Proverbs 18:19 MKJV).

I’d written several letters to him but he hadn’t responded, avoiding us as a plague. I wasn’t free to simply phone them, knowing the great enmity and expecting to be cut off.

Particle - Dark Days Ahead

Marilyn prophesied that dark days awaited me. I didn’t believe her, but rejoiced even if it were true. Why would I rejoice? At one time I would have been troubled by the mere mention of such a prospect. I had a victory unknown to me before.

But I believed the dark days ahead were for Marilyn. Lois told me on March 25th that she had a vision of Marilyn swimming in the ocean. Waves came and practically “dissolved” her (as Lois put it again and again). Marilyn didn’t perish but was swimming fiercely while the waves overwhelmed and covered her.

Marilyn also had a vision of a tidal wave that would come and wipe everything clean. A month or so later, I told Marilyn the wave was on its way, but she had nothing to fear because it was for good.

On March 26th, Lois had a dream wherein she and Marilyn were sitting at the kitchen table, crying. She and Marilyn were apologizing to the Lord for speaking against Him. Others had been at the table and left.

Particle - Confirmations of Trevor’s Prophecy

Repeatedly, I was finding fulfilled Trevor’s March 10th [prophecy](#) of having no limitations by time and space:

While Paul was hundreds of miles away, I spoke in and by my spirit to him. Minutes later, he called, telling me things pertaining to what I had said.

Strangely, I had a prayer for Mark that a portion of my spirit would go with him to Japan. I also recalled the Lord in the mid-80’s directing me to lift up my spirit, that He would send it to other places. Was this more of Trevor’s space and time prophecy?

Writing Archie a letter, there was opposition to sending it. Trevor spoke up saying that Archie was receiving it though I hadn’t sent it, just by my having written it. I knew that Archie knew what I was saying and that it wasn’t necessary to send it.

I received that it wasn’t going well at this time for [Gord and Joan Fuller](#) and that they must suffer the fruits of their presumptuous, obnoxious, arrogant ways. We hadn’t had anything to do with them for years. Why was I thinking of them? We would soon find out in a peculiar way.

Trevor told me he had received that the new we were entering would be gradual and non-eventful, that the change shouldn't disturb us. The day he received this I wanted to tell him the same thing, before he said it.

Particle - April One Woes

On April 1, 1998, I wrote in my journal:

On my 52nd birthday, my weight is on the rise at 178 pounds. If I don't do something about it and don't stay away from beaches, I'm liable to get harpooned. I hate myself this way; it's unhealthy and, most of all, utterly unacceptable to the Lord. Imagine a fat man hanging on the cross! My eating is such a depressing matter to me - it affects me terribly.

A dark night it is today. Yes, I made it to 52, but one can be very sorry and not happy for it. I am bothered about the farm, competition, costs, Sean, Paul, my physical condition and health - bothered about everything. It's terrible! Dark days are here, as Marilyn said. Is there no respite ever? But I don't just look for respite - I long for final, lasting relief and not just relief, but a taste of the opposite of pain; not just neutrality (though that would be wonderful about now), but peace, joy, and fulfillment.

I went into the stock market knowing nothing, throwing all our savings on gambles with liars, thieves, and incompetents, and we lost, severely. The Lord replenished. Then we "bought the farm" (a term for downed fighter pilots in the two Great Wars) at a premium price, above appraisal value, paid for junk we didn't need, bought depleted, abused, useless pasture and hay fields, knowing nothing about anything, yet taking on several things. It has cost much money, health (mine at least), our marriage, privacy, even our lives.

Will we survive? Will we still believe and be counted among those written in the Book of Life? Our competitor comes in, professionally, studied, with less investment, and ruthless. He has a better location, not only to do well for himself, but also to cut off business traffic from us. We are fuel for his fire, drawing traffic for him.

I do everything in utter ignorance, without knowledge or planning, contrary to the instructional wisdom of the Scriptures, and I burn for it, thinking I go by faith.

Particle - Recovery from an Attack of Darkness

Yet, we did buy the farm on **July 10th**, the one that came our way with the business it had, with all those involved. It is the Lord's doing and what can I say? If it's my undoing, so be it. If I need it, better to have it. In spite of what I describe above, I still say the sitting and breaking is over and I'm excited in spite of the darkness. The breaking is something hidden, which must soon come forth. This is not whimsical, but something that defies appearances.

We have received prophecies in the past of many people coming, that many would be blessed, joining us, and blessing others. We have said, "Abraham didn't get his promises in his lifetime," meaning it was possible we wouldn't, either. But it was plain that he wasn't to receive the land or his greatly multiplied seed in his lifetime. He was told he would receive a son in this life, and the rest in the future. The Lord made known to him what applied to which life. If our promises were for the life to come, He would have told us so. Abraham

knew and so should we - and we do. Today, I know. The Lord's promises to us are for this life.

Telling Marilyn what I received, she immediately rejected it, denouncing it as speculation. But then, it goes against all that she has believed recently. She can't accept that I will be here to receive the Lord's promises.

Particle - Roy Rogers and Dale Evans

Years before, the Lord had separated us from religious people, books, and activities. He told us He was separating us from destructive religion. Now I red of Roy Rogers and Dale Evans, my childhood heroes, who came to profess faith in Christ.

What terrible tragedies they suffered! They were also immensely popular. I saw neither of these things having a place in the lives of victorious, believing Christians. Was I judgmental or in error? Would the same happen to me that happened to them, as I preached these things? Or have we been spared, being given to understand? If given to understand, have I fallen by attitudinal reaction like pride and cynicism of those who haven't been as blessed and enlightened as I believe I've been?

Roy and Dale praised and supported [Billy Graham](#). Why didn't they see, or was I the blind one? I say they paid a heavy price for taking on themselves the Name of the Lord in vain.

(Curiously, Roy Rogers died not long after I wrote about these things. He died on July 6, 1998.)

Particle - More Religious Works

Somewhere around this time, I decided to call [Ernie Chadwick](#) in Prince George, BC. He had recently suffered a heart attack. He wanted to send me some audiotapes to listen to, strongly declaring that the move of the Spirit of God was with the speakers on the tapes. I consented, expecting nothing. I listened to Rick Joyner, Paul Cain, John Poole, and certain others. The Lord showed me these men were not in His anointing, but doing their own thing. Ernie was deceived.

Matthew 24:23-28 MKJV

(23) Then if any man shall say to you, "Lo, here is Christ!" Or, "There!" Do not believe it.

(24) For false Christs and false prophets will arise and show great signs and wonders; so much so that, if it were possible, they would deceive even the elect.

(25) Behold, I have told you beforehand.

(26) Therefore if they shall say to you, "Behold, He is in the desert!" Do not go out.

"Behold, He is in the secret rooms!" Do not believe it.

(27) For as the lightning comes out of the east and shines even to the west, so also will be the coming of the Son of Man.

(28) For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered.

Ernie had a [prophecy and vision](#) for me in 1976 that I believed was of God and was fulfilled. Should I, therefore, continue to believe him and follow his advice thereafter?

It doesn't matter if men are used by God at any time to deliver a message or revelation. They are not God. They are earthen vessels like anyone else. Men can err, they can lie, and they can fall, even as prophets of God did (read 1 Kings 13).

As well, Paul declared, **“But even if we or an angel from Heaven preach a gospel to you beside what we preached to you, let him be accursed” (Galatians 1:8 MKJV).**

It is true that, as the Israelites, we must move as does the pillar of fire or pillar of cloud, without doubt or hesitation. If the pillar lifted and moved on in the wilderness while Moses decided to remain, which should the people follow? Moses was not to be followed, but the Lord. Moses was only to be followed as he followed the Lord, if the Lord required that any follow. Should once-appointed leaders go aside from the Lord, their followers become shipwrecked with them.

But was there a difference between a man of God and a believer who was used of God to deliver a certain message? Was Ernie Chadwick a man of God or just someone in Christ's Body used at one time to minister to another member? Do non-ministerial Body members fall away? Yes, they do. The Scriptures give a few examples. Do men of God like Moses or Paul fall away? I don't know of any such examples in Scripture.

(I now find an obituary of Ernest Chadwick of Prince George, BC with a death date about this time of March 4, 1998.)

Particle - My Strength Renewed

Without self-righteousness and contention, it seemed time for me to regroup, to recognize once again that God had His hand on me all this time and has taught us truth, keeping us from this present generation that presumes to know and appears to prosper, but which is in great jeopardy.

I considered our next-door neighbors, for example. They led artificial Christian lives, self-made, and were being called into account for it, suffering the judgments of God on every side. Ironically, the religious who consider themselves beacons stumble in a darkness many in the world have never known.

Particle - Vision: Living Boulders

On April 11, 1998, Mark and Amanda Ogden came to the farm with a friend, Erin Schipper, to talk about the Lord. Later, Amanda called to say that others were interested in visiting with us and would come the next day.

On April 12, about 3:30 a.m., I had a vision wherein I saw a large oblong boulder laying on the ground. It represented a person, and I was that person. The “head” of the boulder was on the right. At my head were six or seven similar boulders laying all about the grounds, in scattered array and various positions.

I saw those boulders rise up and make their way along the far side of me (the central boulder) to the other end (my foot) and lean forward toward me, in harmony, at about a sixty-degree angle from the ground. They were in a straight-lined formation perpendicular to the line in which my body lay. Their leaning forward was one of obeisance. The boulder that represented me lay entirely still throughout the vision. I hadn't moved.

That day, Les and Penny Mills, Gene and Vicky Knorr, Mark and Amanda Ogden and their friend, Erin Schipper, came and met with us at the farm. Having spent nearly a year in semi-isolation, I had a hard time with having that many strangers around, besides the fact that things were hard for all of us as we were in the midst of a prolonged and difficult spiritual process and considering what was going on with Marilyn and Sean.

Before meeting, I felt like there was a “disturbance in the Force.” I was apprehensive, but I didn’t think it was merely my being out of sorts because of my own circumstances. There was more to it, as I would soon find.

We visited for three or four hours. We really had nothing to share with one another though one matter did arise. I happened to say something about spiritual authority and submission to it. There was a sudden, strong negative reaction from them, particularly from Mark Ogden. I told them they despised authority.

Particle - Spiritual Speech to the Seven

I was disappointed with the outcome of our meeting with the seven people. We had always been hoping many would come and join us, according to promises I’ve received of God. By the end of the meeting it was becoming apparent we had enmity on our hands. Time would tell.

A day after our visit, I was given things and wrote them a letter, addressing all seven commonly, yet as individuals, according to what I saw in their lives.

Receiving the letter, Les called saying he agreed with all that was written, saying it was the Word of God. However, the letter didn’t go down well with the others. They resented what I said, besides the fact it was distributed publicly to them as a group. I thought, “Why should one be ashamed or afraid of the truth shared with others? If it comes against you, repent if you’re wrong and rejoice if you’re innocent when ‘men speak all manner of evil against you,’ as the Lord directed. What is the problem?”

A week later, I called Gene Knorr. He and Vicky came with their daughter, Abby Lynn, visited with us for half a day, and stayed for supper. Gene was hurting, hiding, tossing out all sorts of nonsensical, unscriptural opinions and speculations, and was generally an empty, untethered boat tossing on the waves, with a few holes in its hull. It seemed there was no helping them.

We found out they had undergone some traumatic, painful circumstances in Kindersley, Saskatchewan. A “Word of Faith” church was split in two and they seemed to be ostracized and condemned in the process, coming away bruised and beaten, certainly without satisfaction for a job well done or victory over any enemy.

For a time, I thought the boulders represented these visitors, seeing I had the vision the day they came and there were about as many of them as boulders in the vision. I would find I was wrong.

Particle - The Sword of the Lord Surely Slays

We have a suet feeder on our deck that three varieties of woodpeckers enjoy, as do chickadees, nuthatches, and magpies. But at a certain point in spring, starlings come in as a flock and take over. They are a dirty and nasty bird. They chase all others away, squawk, and defecate all over the suet, feeder, and deck. I would take my BB gun and try to shoot them. I usually missed; no matter how I tried to adjust my aim, they would fly away.

After such a time, over the course of a few days, I found perhaps half a dozen dead starlings in the yard. It only appeared these dark, nasty, dirty birds had escaped the gun, but they hadn’t, at least not all of them.

I realized that though there seemed to be little or no effect in using the Sword of the Lord, His Word, with my enemies, it was indeed doing its work, to be seen in due time.

Particle - Ray Prinzing

Les Mills gave me a copy of *God Has a Misfit* by Ray Prinzing, in which is recorded Ray's manifold tragedies and sufferings. Prinzing was very religious and the wrath of God was on him. He thought himself to be a man of God, but he was nothing of the sort - poetic, affected, educated, zealous, loving in the Luciferian spirit, but not at all pious. He paid a heavy price for his presumption and pretension. The Lord showed me Ray's heart many years before, and he hadn't changed.

Particle - Pharaoh Indulges Moses and Aaron

Is it not reasonable to ask why Pharaoh didn't apprehend, imprison, or execute Moses and Aaron from the start or any time thereafter? How is it they had the honor of being received by the royal rulership of a superpower? Who were they to be so honored? They had no wealth, fame, money, army, connections, lobbyists, or anything to influence Pharaoh or his country, yet he allowed them - despised Hebrews, abominable shepherds - to return time and again for an audience with him.

Who says there is no God?

Particle - Barney Knelsen

An acquaintance of Les Mills, Barney Knelsen, called and paid us a visit. He told me that when Les had talked to him about me, he received that I was *"consumed with rejection."* I couldn't deny that rejection had been a major element in my life, but was I consumed with it?

I was farmed off to my [great aunt and uncle](#) for school, being much alone and teased and laughed at by all, including my first- and second-grade teacher, John Urichyn, and rejected by a [favored cousin](#) that was always two-faced.

Then when becoming a believer, suddenly the old world with all its inhabitants rejected me. When received by evangelicals, it wasn't long before the Spirit escorted me [out their door](#), this time Marilyn coming with me.

Then briefly, the Lord took us in and out of [Pentecostal/Charismatic](#) circles.

Years later, in 1989, at Moon River Estates, the executive and prominent members of the community [trashed us](#). Now in 1998, as Barney spoke, my wife was contemptuously rejecting me for another man more than young enough to be her son. Perhaps I was consumed with rejection, after all.

While I was no match for my circumstances, I did, by this point, know the Lord would see me through. Barney also said, *"The time of rejection and battles with such is over."* This came to pass. He was right.

Now who was Barney Knelsen?

Barney was trying so hard to "love." The Lord revealed his spirit to me, showing me he was hurting. I told him what I was seeing and told him how, if he acknowledged his state, God would bring him

into wide, open spaces of blessing and freedom. Sadly, he wasn't prepared to be honest about himself and his defeat and failures.

Where did all this begin? Barney once led a spiritual fellowship until a now-famous couple, George and Hazel Hill, came along. I was told the Hills wanted to speak in tongues in Barney's meetings and he forbade them. They left and took several of the congregation with them. Barney was devastated (though he wouldn't admit defeat), unable to regain his desired status as the shepherd of the group.

The essence of Barney's situation was that he had begun a religious fellowship apart from the visible conventional systems, but essentially, he and his followers were still in bed with the harlot, Mystery Babylon the Great - false religion. They weren't free of the works of the flesh. Oh, I tell you, when the harlot gets a hold of you, her grip is amazing! And her perfume lingers for years, if it ever goes away. I fervently advise all to run from her for your lives. Run!

By God's mercy, Barney lost his works to the Hills, but he didn't see it as a blessing. He was a compromiser, clinging to a mixture of truth and error, unwilling to relinquish his own glory and the praise of men.

Years later, Barney gave his daughter over in marriage to worshippers and servants of Ashtoreth at the Northside Christian Fellowship, which, he candidly confessed, despised him. He once attended there, but left. He never repented of his past church affiliations. He was as a bat - one not accepted by either heavenly bird or earthly beast. One can leave the external harlot and still take her with him. Her subjects are secure in her, and only a miracle can [deliver them](#).

George and Hazel Hill went on to found [Victory Churches International](#) with churches around the world. From them came forth Dick and Joan Deweert (later spelled "Dewert"), who first pastored the Victory Christian Church in Lethbridge and then founded CJIL ("Christ Jesus Is Lord"), the first Canadian 24/7 "Christian" television station, which was later to be known as The Miracle Channel.

The Deweerts lost this earthly glory when Dick [fell into adultery](#).

Particle - Universalist Literature from Les Mills

Les came to me one day and said, "I need to say to you, '**Blessed is he that comes in the Name of the Lord.**'" This reminded me of [Mike Trepanier](#) in 1980, who dropped by unannounced to our La Verendrye home, saying the very same thing. (These men understood those words as a verbal formula, not as a spiritual reality of the heart.)

Les was one to gather and read much literature from various Christian writers, primarily those preaching the reconciliation of all things. He brought me writings by Preston Eby, George Hawtin, and some by David Ebaugh, as well as George Warnock (who I don't think believed in the reconciliation of all men). I appreciated Eby's "Man of Sin" series, which served well to confirm what the Lord had just been teaching me when Les arrived on the scene.

The man of sin is within; he is us. What are the chances of such rare revelation to be confirmed by a stranger bringing writings I had never seen or heard of?

Who says there is no God?

Though I had already known it, I came to be thankful that God used Les and Gene to focus me more on the blessed truth that all men would be saved in the fulness of times.

Particle - Eleventh Eviction of My Life

Marquise Harris, our neighbor across the road, was sulking at me, so I decided to pay her a visit. It turned out she was upset because I hadn't permitted Jonathan to attend her son Thomas' birthday party. (I was teaching Jonathan the wrongfulness and ungodliness of birthday celebrations.) She said she felt sorry for him, insisting he was going to have problems.

Having seen [the black angels](#) over their house, having seen her son Thomas as a very angry child when he was about three years old, the apparent lack of discipline with their children, and knowing the children were not being taught the Scriptures and the ways of God, I said to Marquise that perhaps she should be feeling sorry for *her own* children. She showed me the door.

Particle - Knorr's Knock

Gene Knorr called. Having read my writings, he said that he *hated* them, that they ministered death and condemned him. He said Trevor Benson was a tree with bad fruit. He said I was the tree and Trevor was the evil fruit thereof.

He spoke of his teen daughter, Abby Lynn, who was headed to Ireland, paying her way by dancing and working in bars. I had written Gene a long letter, advising in the Lord that his daughter not go, especially if she was naming the Name of the Lord. Trevor had also written her a letter, advising her against it, although his letter was not of God (thus the reference to the tree and fruit). Trevor was simply after [another woman](#).

Finally, Gene said that I was a preacher of bondage and that God didn't normally speak a specific word "to the natural realm," saying, "Go here," or, "Don't go there"; "Do this," or, "Don't do that," and especially not through another man. I guess he hadn't read of Agabus, who prophesied by the Spirit that Paul not go to Jerusalem because chains awaited him there (Acts 21:10-11). Nor did Gene recall the many times the Lord told the disciples what to do concerning the natural realm.

Gene was a carpenter. We hired him to help finish building a chicken barn at the farm. While there, he was advising Trevor that he didn't have to listen to me, that we were in false works, building our own kingdom, a Babylonish creation. He counseled Sean to flee for his life from Marilyn, likening Sean to Joseph and Marilyn to Potiphar's wife who sought to lay with Joseph.

There was some truth in all of it, but where was Gene coming from and what all was he considering or failing to consider? What Satan said to Jesus in the temptations was true, but the application was lethal. So with Job's three friends, whom Satan had brought to mislead and torment him by speaking things that were, of themselves, certainly true.

Gene also advised that I take over the farm and have my wife removed from the operation. While I understood it was the counsel of the Scriptures that wives be **"keepers at home,"** the Lord had said to me concerning Marilyn and Sean, *"Let it happen,"* and I was to stay out of farm affairs. Speak of my looking wrong according to the Scriptures and my detractors being the wise of God!

While Gene's instructions made perfect sense, I had to go by faith, obeying God, Whose counsel or command was quite contrary to logic, reason, or His Law. Was not Abraham commanded to

sacrifice his son, an apparently heinous trespass against God's Law (Genesis 9:6)? Yet he knew what was required of him and Who required it. Had others known, they would have told him he was insane or demon-possessed.

I knew there was nothing more to be said to Gene, so I didn't argue with him. When talking about how the Knorrs and Mills had suffered in their past, Marilyn received, *"They have suffered, but they haven't suffered enough."*

Particle - Of Gene Knorr

Gene hated God, hating the Law. He was presumptuous, arrogant, heady, high-minded, smooth as oil, vindictive, fearful, vicious, a lover of pleasure, boastful, proud, a blasphemer, incontinent, despising us, ever learning and never able to come to knowledge of the truth, withstanding the truth, a man with a corrupt mind, reprobate.

He and his companions, I heard as I weeded the lawn, were of the synagogue of Satan. He would proceed no further and his folly was about to be unveiled to all. He was a false accuser, judging entirely after the appearance, wise in his own eyes. He was... a devil sent to try me in an hour of temptation.

Particle - Les Sees Sean and Marilyn

Without being told what was going on with Sean and Marilyn, Les Mills came to me saying he immediately saw an unhealthy relationship between them. He knew there was adultery, suspecting it might be physical. I told him I didn't believe there was anything physical, but did admit and inform him of what was going on between them.

I marveled at what I was hearing, wondering what the Lord was doing, and I showed him the [prophecies](#) I had for Marilyn and Sean. I think I did this against the counsel of the Lord. I was not to tell them anything, as I recall. I have been notorious for disobedience; notwithstanding, God has been very patient and merciful to me.

Les decided he needed to go to the farm and confront Marilyn and Sean. I said if that is what he believed he needed to do, he should do it. When he and Penny did so, Marilyn denied there was anything happening between Sean and her.

"What *IS* your relationship with Sean?" asked Penny at one point. Marilyn said they were just friends. Of course she lied, and if the relationship had been a clean one, would she have answered so?

Hearing what happened, I asked Marilyn, "Doesn't it occur to you that there's something very wrong with what you're doing if you have to lie about it? Why couldn't you say, 'We're brother and sister in Christ?'" But she refused to listen, justifying herself, saying they wouldn't understand. "I should think not," I replied.

Particle - "It's There," Number One

On May 5th, I paid [Bob and Lynn Gregson](#) a visit and told them everything that was happening at the farm with Marilyn and Sean. Lynn said, "Even if there is nothing physical, *it's there!*" I agreed. Bob felt I should *"let go,"* which is what the Lord had already told me more than once saying, *"Let it*

happen.” Those were both pieces of counsel I accepted as being from the Lord, though neither of them professed active faith in God.

Lynn told me she had been deeply hurt by things I said in 1985. I didn’t realize how I had affected her. I cried and apologized, but in the days thereafter, I tried to recall exactly what I might have said that had troubled her so. All Lynn said was that I had “judged” her. She had resisted Christian teaching I was giving Bob in 1984 and ‘85.

I recalled telling Bob that if he was going to follow the Lord and she wasn’t willing or able to do the same, he’d have to forsake her, according to Matthew 10. He reported her negative reactions. I began to wonder if Bob had accurately told her what I said. It seems there could have been confusion; perhaps not.

More than once after our May 5th meeting, I tried to meet with them and clarify matters, but it never happened. Bob resisted my attempts at meeting.

Particle - “It’s There,” Number Two

On May 6th, I called Mickey Patrick, telling him I could now more easily identify with what he had gone through when his wife left him. He said my words were very timely but didn’t explain. Telling him what was happening, he used the very same words Lynn Gregson used only the day before, “Yes, maybe the physical hasn’t happened, but *it’s there!*” with the same peculiar emphasis.

Particle - Mike Williams

A friend of Mark and Amanda’s, Debbie Summers, came visiting. She left me with literature and tapes of a Universalist preacher, Mike Williams. Mike preached “grace.” According to what I understood of his message, there really was no need to recognize sin, repentance, or obedience to God. I bring Debbie up because she, as an example of others of like mind and belief, became quite belligerent and downright nasty with me, quite offended at things I was saying, as though we had no right to judge or correct anything or anyone because “it has all been perfectly settled at the cross.”

Then why have a problem with me? Debbie was quite troubled, rebelling against the false gospel, replacing one false one for another, yet not knowing the True. Mystery has the unrepentant sinner coming and going.

I perceived in their doctrine the fulfillment of the words the Lord spoke to me [years before](#). He said, *“They will come to you saying, ‘Law, Law!’ accusing you of trusting in the Law because they hate the Law, and they hate the Law because they hate Me. They will come to you saying, ‘Grace! Grace!’ but I will show both you and them the fruits of their supposed grace, which is iniquity (lawlessness). While they will be cast into outer darkness with their grace, where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth, I will grant you to bask in the true grace I have afforded you and all those who love My Law and Me.”*

Particle - Hurting By Rejection

When Barny prophesied that I was *“consumed with rejection,”* I remembered the [question-and-answer period](#) I had with the Lord in Bernalillo in 1984. I realized that the Lord was also suffering greatly from rejection.

“He is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief; and as it were a hiding of faces from Him, He being despised, and we esteemed Him not” (Isaiah 53:3 MKJV).

By now, Barny was turning others against me because, I suppose, I was a threat to his territory, those he sought to lead, namely Mark and Amanda, Debbie Summers, and Les and Penny (not that they needed encouragement to turn away. Barny was possessive and territorial, all the time denying it. I again felt the rejection that was there from all those who came. It was persistent and invariable, and there was nothing I could do about it.

I found out that Mark and Amanda had sent Debbie, in her troubled spirit and all her turmoil, to minister to me. Everybody knows better and chooses his or her own way, thereby suffering and causing others to suffer. While they witness my rejection, they all think I’m weak and in need of ministering. What about God and His rejection? Does He need ministering, too?

“Surely He has borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions; He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was on Him; and with His stripes we ourselves are healed” (Isaiah 53:4-5 MKJV).

Particle - Whose Voice Is It?

A journal entry:

Tonight, Sean told me he heard three times in a strong voice, one time immediately after another, as he was milking the cow, that Marilyn was going to be his wife. But I say the Lord speaks in a still, small voice, and He doesn’t repeat Himself. Does one read in the Scriptures of God speaking to Elijah saying, “Ahab is going to die; Ahab is going to die; Ahab is going to die”? Or saying to Saul of Tarsus, “Go to Ananias; go to Ananias; go to Ananias”?

Men foolishly repeat and emphasize themselves, but not the Creator, Who speaks quietly, with chosen words and few. Yet I’m not believed, and things must continue and conclude.

Particle - Dream: Les and Penny Turned Cold

Early in the morning of May 16, 1998, I dreamt that I was at Les and Penny’s. They had a large house and were having a feast with numerous other people. Les was reserved and Penny quite cool toward me, even directly disregarding Marilyn and me, closing a door leading to the kitchen in my face and turning her back on us as we were leaving.

Sitting at the table with Les, I said, “There’s a problem between us, isn’t there, Les?” He looked at me knowingly and sheepishly. “You talked to Gene and Barny and concluded that I am a false prophet or at least that my prophecies are false, right?” He nodded. “Well, things are going to happen and you’ll know otherwise. See, Marilyn? I told you so.”

“I was wrong,” Marilyn replied, annoyed as she went about busy with serving food.

I said, “You think I’m in darkness, Les, don’t you? Perhaps you feel you may try to deliver me out of darkness.” He nodded with a slight, timid smile. “Do you know the difference between light and darkness, Les? You came to me saying, **‘Blessed is he that comes in the Name of the Lord,’** but now you’ve changed your mind.”

He began interrupting, but I proceeded, “Les, just let me finish... you’ll find things happen and you’ll see that what I spoke is true. Let’s go, Marilyn.”

Marilyn was preoccupied and reluctant to heed me. As we were leaving, she tried to get (or someone was giving her) some cabbage rolls and something else. I said, “I don’t think we should (accept).”

The dream ended.

Particle - Some Quarrelsome Foursome

I ended up sending a hard-hitting letter to Mark, Amanda, and Debbie, rebuking them sharply. Did they like it? Like most cats love to be in water. Days later, they came out with Barny to contend with me, quite upset. Barny thought to come and minister and correct “in love.” The Lord gave me to stand my ground with a Word from Isaiah, with the emphasis as indicated:

“Cry aloud, do not spare, lift up your voice like a ram’s horn, and show My people their rebellion, and the house of Jacob their sins” (Isaiah 58:1 MKJV).

Particle - What To Do with the Farm

Several times I wondered if we should sell the farm and be free of it. We didn’t know what we were doing, everyone was overrun with the work every day, Marilyn was constantly tired, unable to spend time with her young son, and there was nothing but dissension and strife both at the farm and in our home, triggered by elements and persons at the farm.

Gene and Les urged us to sell, saying it was a Babylonish project that God condemned. Bob Fife, Les Mills, and the Gregsons urged me to go back to the farm and take control, and many suggested that we somehow change operations, though none had any specific solutions or recommendations.

In prayer, I received that we should not sell; we should continue as we were doing, with Marilyn responsible and I remaining where I was, with greater issues at stake above all the farm aspects.

Particle - Erin’s Error

The empty come as full, and the full are empty. I called Erin Schipper. Her words I am now about to relate are typical of the thoughts and words of so many people professing faith in Christ.

My journal entry:

She thinks to have and know it all. She has chosen her own way and judged God, rather than submitting to His judgment. It will not go well for her. But what confusion! She calls me a false prophet. She says I am not a prophet, but perhaps a man of God*. She says I am a “people reader,” like her. The problem is, I’ve never been able to read people that I can tell, and the second problem is that if she’s a people reader, why can’t she read me?

She said I have no love in saying they have no idea what real love is. She said I have a “smooth way with words” and control people by fear. She says we serve two different gods (she’s right, yet allows that I may be a man of God). She says she will hear directly from God for herself (she won’t, but will think she does) and wants no further communications from me, questioning my right to be involved in her life on any matter. That may be true, especially if I’m *not* a prophet of God, but if I *am* a prophet sent of God, doesn’t God have the right to speak to anyone as He chooses, through whom He will? She says she knows I appreciate honesty so she was ‘letting me have it.’ She finally said I should “go be a martyr.”

I must ask: Does a false prophet appreciate honesty? Does a man of God *not* appreciate it?”

I feel to record these things she has said for future to be used against her. Sounds vengeful. It appears Erin has been discussing all this with Mark and Amanda, and that they haven’t been as honest and direct with me as she was.

*In the year of posting this Part Seven - 2015, I think I understand where Erin Schipper was coming from. Martin Van Popta, who came out of the Canadian Reform Church and has gotten saved along with his wife, explained to me that Dutch Reform people don’t believe in present-day prophets and that if anyone is called a prophet, he must be a false one. Being Dutch in a predominantly Dutch Reform area of Canada, Erin likely would have had this belief. Yet she seemed to think I was possibly a man of God, though I was a false prophet. Curious contradiction.

The future would tell the wisdom of her stance.

Particle - Letter to Chris and Nathan

I was angry with Chris and Nathan, seeing their departure as betrayal. On May 20th, I wrote a scathing letter, describing and enumerating the things we had to put up with from them, which we had often overlooked, and which they didn’t begin to consider.

I also chastised them for lacking the decency to be honest with us about leaving. Had they come forth and said they couldn’t remain any longer, I believe I would have been willing to get them started elsewhere with food, shelter, employment, and whatever else needed until they were able to fend for themselves.

Particle - A Prayer-Produced, Predictive Promise

Feeling terrible about all the rejection and opposition from “the seven” and others, not being believed, called a liar, despised, and ostracized, I went to prayer and heard the following words:

“Victor, we believe that God is with you and the only way for us is to come to you. We don’t like what you are saying to us or how you say it, but we feel we have to accept and submit. We don’t know what to do but to come and listen. We don’t see the darkness you speak of that we are in, but we sense that you know. We want you to help us.

“Please bear with us and deliver us from our destructives. Don’t give up on us. We don’t understand why you are so harsh, or why the Lord would speak to us that way, but we sense it is the Lord, though we don’t understand. We trust that if we believe and obey, He will be faithful. He has chosen it this way to deal with us through you.”

I then wrote, “I must wait for these people to come to me. I can’t go running after them. The Lord must bring them if they’re to come at all. And they must come with earnestness, pressing with zeal, undaunted, determined, with violence, if necessary. They’ve been told enough and must believe what they have already heard. I don’t have to struggle with anyone; I can rest. The Lord has said, *‘I will do it all.’*”

Particle - Spiritual Authority

Barney Knelsen asserted that seeing we were all kings and priests unto the Lord (Revelation 1:5-6; 5:10), we were all equal in authority and status before God. Debbie Summers loved that, and certainly Mark and Amanda Ogden agreed with it. But is it true? If so, let those who believe it explain:

One, while God called all of Israel a nation of kings and priests (Exodus 19:5-6), how is it He still chose one tribe to be the priesthood before Him on behalf of the rest of Israel?

Two, Elijah’s mantle was not passed on to any prophets except Elisha. Why should Elisha have received this honor above all the prophets, if all were equal? But this is still Old Testament. Barney would argue that we became equal with Christ’s sacrifice and our new birth.

If those two examples are invalid because the words Moses spoke in Exodus 19 were only meant for the future congregation of God, commonly known as “the Church,” let’s go on...

Three, how is it that Jesus chose 12 men as apostles to feed His sheep? It could be argued that this was not to direct, but only to feed. And why no women as apostles?

Four, how is it we find 24 elders in Heaven and Michael leading the angels in warfare? It could be argued that these elders were there only to *feed* others, not bear authority, and that Michael was simply noteworthy in his might, but not necessarily leading... which would be stretching it a bit.

As well, it could be argued that this was only among angels, not men. But then, didn’t Paul say the saints would one day judge angels? Perhaps it could be argued that correction is one thing, but authority another... which would be stretching it. With responsibility comes authority in any reasonable situation. How does one correct without authority?

Five, how is it Paul was appointing elders in the churches and directing Timothy to do the same? How is it he also told the Corinthians to do as he commanded? Can one imagine them equally telling him what to do? Where would be the order? And why weren’t women and novices appointed to these positions?

Six, how is it that husbands are to be heads of their wives and wives are to submit to their husbands, though nowhere is it said that wives are the heads of their husbands and husbands are to submit to their wives? As well, parents are not to submit to children but vice versa, and servants or slaves are to obey their masters (1 Timothy 3:5, 5:17; Ephesians 5:22-24; 6:1, 5-9; 1 Peter 3:6).

While it’s true we have equal status in Christ by nature, is it necessarily true that we all have right to the same positions and authority toward one another? Can there be any question that there must be positions of authority in order to have order and not chaos in any community?

Seven, how is it the Hebrews writer speaks thus, if there is no order of leadership and authority?:

“Yield to those leading you, and be submissive, for they watch for your souls, as those who must give account, that they may do it with joy and not with grief; for that is unprofitable for you” (Hebrews 13:17 MKJV).

Eight, how is it James and the elders in Jerusalem directed the saints throughout the world, telling them what is right or wrong and what to do?

Nine, do the Gentile believers and all new believers in Christ, Jewish or Gentile, have equal authority to tell the elders and apostles what to do?

Ten, as a new believer, I know I had nothing in the way of any authority or status in real, spiritual terms towards older believers. I would have done well to shut my mouth and submit.

The Knorrs, Knelsens, Mills, Ogdens, Summers, and Schipper all despised authority with a fervent passion. As apostles said:

“The Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to reserve the unjust for a day of judgment, to be punished, and especially those who walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness and *despise dominion*. They are darers, self-pleasing; not trembling at glories, speaking evil” (2 Peter 2:9-10 MKJV).

“In the same way, these dreamers make the flesh unclean, *having no respect for authorities, and say evil of rulers*” (Jude 1:8 BBE).

Particle - Starre Fails from Earth

As I was going to garage sales in June, I met up with [Don Morgan](#). He informed me that [Aleeyta Starre](#) had died of a massive heart attack at his kitchen table on February 23 of this.

Particle - Peeved with Paul

Seldom did I hear from Paul and when I did, it was always vexing. He was doing his own thing. I saw the enemy, that man of sin, still there and we wouldn't *“come together until the enemy is removed,”* even as the Lord said. I suspected Paul was back with Kerri, but hiding it from me. He was deceitful.

On June 6th, I faxed this letter to him:

Your reaction to the criticism of you this morning is so very unpleasant, but typical and ever consistent with the way you are and have always been. “Well, they did it, too! I’m not the only one... besides, I did some good, too.” In other words, 10% on a test is every bit as good as 70%, because at least it’s something, or... everyone else got 10%, so what’s so bad about that?

Your self-measuring barometer has always been others; the wicked and the foolish are your yardstick. As long as you remain and satisfy yourself that way, we walk two different roads and serve two different gods. With such difference, there is no harmony between us and there can be no reconciliation.

You were arrogant and obstinate in 1979 in Revivim, Israel, and you’re no different today. Is it any wonder you are where you are, as you are? And there’s nothing I can do. Indeed, the

son of perdition is as his name and you walk in him until he goes or you go. One or the other must. In truth, you're one and the same.

Only circumstance arranged by God and His revealing and destroying you by the Spirit of His mouth will do. How long? How long must we travel with that unsavory, consuming, self-possessing character we call "Christ," but who is us? How long? - Victor.

Particle - Another Word from the Lord

As I was brooding and bothered about the Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, Knelsen, and others, these words came to me:

"Come and confess not only your perceived sins, My people, but come confessing yourselves as you are. You run about, seeking pleasure and peace and find none. You eat out of broken, empty dishes and drink out of empty containers. You yourselves are empty, full of foolish notions, pretending to help, and you help no one.

You are depressed, deflated because you leak. Rather than being filled with the Holy Spirit, having good words to speak, you empty yourselves by thinking and speaking foolishly about things that don't profit, leaving you depressed. You scatter, spill your seed to the ground, wasting and laboring fruitlessly. You anger Me to the point of destroying you, your ways are so vile.

What is particularly offensive is that you do all these things in My Name. You are evil in all your righteous ways. Adulterers and adulteresses, whoremongers, whoring after your pleasures, playing God, defiling everything you touch, acting as God standing in the holy place, calling for worship. I will destroy you; you will be no more, and then will I rest, and only then."

Particle - Of, To, For, In, By, and Through

First, one speaks **of** the Lord, then **to** the Lord, then **for** Him, and finally **in**, **by**, and **through** Him. Four dimensions of relationship and speech concerning God.

Particle - Hard Letters

I began to write hard letters to the Ogdens, Knorrs, Debbie Summers, Barny Knelsen, and Les and Penny Mills. I was troubled in the night about how I conducted myself with all these people - communicating by letter rather than face-to-face, exerting force, not at all practicing the principle of "live and let live." I expressed no apparent kindness, gentleness, or love. Rather, my approach seemed to be "my way or the highway."

I thought, "Instead of preaching, shouldn't I be **praying** for them? Instead of faulting, criticizing, and scolding, shouldn't I just live my life, give the example, and not get offended?"

But this I knew: Lives without words aren't sufficient to preach. Didn't Peter sharply rebuke Simon and Ananias and Sapphira? Didn't Paul rebuke Peter, the Corinthians, Galatians, and Elymas, and didn't he counsel Timothy to rebuke some sharply? What about John the Baptist with the

multitudes, and Jesus with the religious? They didn't spare. Neither did the prophets of old spare - not Moses, Samuel, David, Nathan, Solomon, Elijah, Elisha, Jeremiah, Isaiah; none of them.

The Lord gave us all Isaiah 58:1 for me (not the first time):

"Cry aloud, do not spare, lift up your voice like a ram's horn, and show My people their rebellion, and the house of Jacob their sins" (Isaiah 58:1 MKJV).

So why did I get these doubts that left me in condemnation and fear? It was wicked unbelief - fear of man instead of fear of God.

I thought, "At least tell them these things face-to-face!" Gene and Les wondered if I was schizophrenic. They said when we talked face-to-face, I was friendly, but in my letters I was harsh.

Coincidentally, as I am writing this portion of the Theo-autobiography, for my customary daily reading I am at 2 Corinthians 10 in the Good News version:

"I, Paul, make a personal appeal to you—I who am said to be meek and mild when I am with you, but harsh with you when I am away. By the gentleness and kindness of Christ I beg you not to force me to be harsh when I come; for I am sure I can deal harshly with those who say that we act from worldly motives.

It is true that we live in the world, but we do not fight from worldly motives. The weapons we use in our fight are not the world's weapons but God's powerful weapons, which we use to destroy strongholds. We destroy false arguments; we pull down every proud obstacle that is raised against the knowledge of God; we take every thought captive and make it obey Christ" (2 Corinthians 10:1-5 GNB).

And: **"Someone will say, 'Paul's letters are severe and strong, but when he is with us in person, he is weak, and his words are nothing!' Such a person must understand that there is no difference between what we write in our letters when we are away and what we will do when we are there with you" (2 Corinthians 10:10-11 GNB).**

The Lord has encouraged me to speak and not to fear or waver. Our culture has a perverse take on proper attitude and conduct, and naturally I've been influenced by it so as not to see things and people the way I ought, the way God sees them.

Political correctness and contemporary social decorum are Satan's tools to stifle and resist the Spirit of Truth.

Particle - Marilyn Prophecies Strangely

After I talked to Sean about death to the flesh, that death and hell had to be accepted, Marilyn said to me that the darkest and hardest time for me was yet to come, with no evil in it, but that I should trust the Lord and not fear. She said that what I was about to endure was only a fraction in comparison to the glory that awaited me. A while before, she received the words, *"the end of all flesh"* concerning me. She also heard and said, *"You don't know who I am."*

Enquiring of the Lord, I couldn't see those words as from Him as applicable to me. But if they were, it would be very good for me.

Particle - Jonathan's Vision: Boulders Shaking

On the 7th or 8th or so of June 1998, Jonathan had a vision of six boulders of varying size and shape, standing and shaking. He said it seemed that I was shaking them and that they were shaking the whole earth.

Was this Jonathan's imagination? Was he thinking of the boulders vision I had? I don't believe so. I believed he saw from the Lord, though I didn't fully understand the vision. Were these boulders the visitors we recently had and with whom I was dealing? It was possible.

Some time later, I would understand. It was indeed a vision from God.

Particle - Healing for Les Mills

Les had been having major difficulty with depression bouts for many years. During those bouts, he would isolate himself, and Penny would cover for him socially, fielding phone calls and making excuses for him. That explained why she lied to me about where he was when I called. It bothered me that they couldn't be honest with me.

In a vision, I saw Les with a little light inside his lower torso, to one side. It seemed like that light was going to grow. I interpreted that to mean that Les would begin to heal from his problem.

Particle - Les Mills Speaks of George Warnock

George Warnock is an elderly preacher and writer who was involved with George Hawtin, James Watt, and others in a "move of the Spirit of God" that occurred at North Battleford, Saskatchewan in the late forties. George lives in Cranbrook, British Columbia, perhaps a five-hour drive from our home.

Les Mills had many of George's writings, including "The Feast of Tabernacles." He suggested we go visit George. Marilyn expected that if I went, there would be a clash between George and me. Having read some of George's literature and given my experiences with many others, I conclude she was likely right.

I didn't necessarily disagree with what George was teaching. It was more his spirit, in which I felt the usual humdrum deportment and thinking of nominal orthodox Christianity. I was looking for the Life of Jesus Christ in Christians and never finding it - only ho-hum words, opinion, theory, form, formal lifestyle, posture, doctrine, philosophy, and theology. I rarely encountered the real, vibrant Christian Life. I didn't see that it was any different with George. Notwithstanding their profession of faith and status as spiritual leaders, men are everywhere dead.

I received this of George: He has seen some truth of the Feast of Tabernacles, but he hasn't experienced it. He has consumed the letter of it, but the spirit of it hasn't consumed him. He has the theory, but not the practical. This isn't a problem. The question might be asked, "Why doesn't he have the reality of the Third Feast, the entrance into the City?"

Les and I never did visit George together, but there would come the time that Jonathan and I would.

Particle - Frequent and Strong Battles with Marilyn

Hardly a day went by when we didn't have verbal strife, especially when Marilyn was having her time of the month, but also at other times.

I said, "Lord, this is evil. Do You visit evil on us for our sins? Is it the farm? Shall we give it up, as Gene Knorr and Les Mills insist?"

I heard that He gave us the farm as a blessing, not as a curse, and that we needed to believe, go on, and do what needs doing. It was good. Also, I saw Him keeping us in so many matters, notwithstanding failures and losses.

I purposed to visit the Ogdens and Barney, which, I believe, they proposed. Marilyn was against it. The others at the farm agreed that I should go and take Sean with me. This was one of those times where I was gradually realizing I had to step out and do what I thought to do and not permit Marilyn to intervene or overrule. It seemed we were constantly on different wavelengths.

Particle - Meeting With Knelsen and Ogdens

Sean and I met at Mark and Amanda's with Barney present. There was a battle. Barney exposed himself totally; he was a false prophet - of that I had no doubt. He denied Christ speaking through a man; he said I was arrogant, without love and unteachable. He opposed everything I said and stood for, even the Word I was given to speak to him, which he said he had anticipated. Bitter Barney.

Barney left the Ogdens with a letter I had for him and the paper, [Iniquity](#), recently written. They all fought me, though the Ogdens didn't take an open, firm stand against me, as Barney did.

In retrospect, I see that Barney was intense on holding on to his followers, finding me a threat. He was apparently still very defensive after losing his "flock" to George and Hazel Hill around 1980, nearly two decades earlier.

Unrepentant of seeking preeminence among men, he continued in his stubborn and proud way, which tormented him and defiled everything he touched.

Particle - The First and Last Adams

There are some interesting parallels between the first Adam and the Last Adam, Jesus Christ.

One, and most obvious, both are referred to as "Adam."

Two, both are known as "the son of God" (Luke 3:38).

Three, death has been referred to as sleep in Scripture. Both Adams were put to sleep.

Four, both were naked at the crucial point, Adam when God took his rib, fashioning a wife, and Jesus on the cross when pierced for the Bride-to-be.

Five, both were roused from that sleep.

Six, in each case, the result was a wife; in the first, it was Eve, in the second, it was the Body of Christ.

Seven, both suffered a wound in the side while asleep.

Eight, each one/One took all of mankind with him/Him - one down, the Other up.

Nine, each gave up his/His life to have the wife; the first Adam followed Eve in her deception, willfully sinning, and the Last Adam followed the wife to hell in order to redeem her; He was made sin for us (2 Corinthians 5:21).

Ten, both went into sin, the first **committing** sin with her, but the Last **made** sin for her.

I'm certain I have by no means exhausted the parallels.

Particle - The Way of the Transgressor

We opened the June 19th *Herald* one day and found that on May 2nd, Chris Hafichuk had been in a bicycle accident and suffered "moderate to severe brain damage" and hemorrhaging in the head for about 90 minutes before others discovered and rescued him. He spent a month in the hospital. It was estimated that it would take him about two years to recover. He also suffered blurred vision and memory problems.

It was three months less a day from the time he and Nathan [left us](#) in the middle of the night without notice. God spared him greater injury or death, but I couldn't help believing he suffered the consequences of his conduct and attitude, and the timing seemed significant. I had often said to others, "He that risks life and limb for sport is a fool." Chris decided to disregard the advice and challenge "Dutchman's Revenge," a threatening coulee bike trail in Lethbridge.

He was constantly arguing with others. Lois had once warned him not to take his intellectual abilities for granted or use them wrongfully. She said that the Lord could take those from him. I recalled the [prophecy](#) over him years before.

When the *Herald* interviewed Chris about the accident, he attributed nothing to God, neither judgment nor protection. His helmet, he said, was what saved him. Chris had spent years with us, but it was as though he had never heard a thing about God.

I later found out Archie had been broadsided as he drove his truck through a controlled intersection. His older vehicle was a write-off. I don't know that he sustained any injury.

We were told his daughter, Erin, was in a serious auto accident, in which she sustained significant injuries. It felt bad to hear of these things. Over the years, I had tried to shelter them from God's judgment by continually being on their case to do right, to keep from any sin. Finally, when they left, it wasn't long before the things I tried to prevent came on them. In the years with us, they suffered nothing of the kind.

We received anonymous calls asking for Nathan. It seemed he was in financial difficulty and was being pursued by creditors or collection agencies. I had no idea where he was and told the callers so.

In time we would hear of still other tragic occurrences in Archie's family.

Particle - Prophecy by Lois for Me

On June 23rd, Lois received these words concerning me:

“My son, My beloved, I have not forsaken you, although it may appear to be so. Every circumstance you are faced with has been My design. You will not be able to contain the glory of the place I have for you. You will not have minded one bit the trial I have put you through. You will know how small it has been, compared to what I have for you. Your complete life has been My doing. Do not despair; things are not as they appear. Trust Me, My son, please trust Me. I am with you; you are Mine.”

Particle - Jonathan’s Vision: More Boulders

On June 23, 1998, Jonathan said, “Dad, I just had another vision. I saw two boulders with rock arms and white gloves. They were shaking hands. Behind them were two bigger boulders with space between them. The ground was orange and had pebbles all over it - these were also orange. The sky was a clear blue.”

Orange is a combination of red and yellow or gold. Gold is representative of the Heavenly realm and God. Red is earthly, as in “Adam.” It is a combination of heaven and earth, Jew and Gentile, representing reconciliation. The two boulders were shaking hands.

In time to come, I would have another interpretation of the vision.

Particle - Apology from Chris and Nathan

On June 27, 1998, eight days after the *Herald* article about Chris’s cycling injury, he dropped off a typed letter at our farmer’s market booth. It read:

Everyone at the farm,

We are writing this letter to address a number of points. We apologize for not giving you the last GST check. Included is a reimbursement of \$27.00. We also apologize for taking some food when we left the farm. Also included is reimbursement for it as when at your prices. We have since realized that leaving in the middle of the night was not a responsible nor mature decision and for this we are sorry. We believed at the time it was our only option.

We also apologize for the attitude in which our previous had been written. When we read your letter we were both very hurt by your derogatory and scathing remarks. We would like you to know that we do not feel the same way towards you and we forgive you for any wrong doing you may have done to us.

Chris and Nathan

Particle - The Man of Sin Comes First and Ends Last

The first Adam, earthy, took his place below the Last Adam, Who is from above. Esau, the firstborn, served Jacob. Ishmael, Abraham’s firstborn, the device of men, gave way to Isaac, the son of promise. Manasseh, Joseph’s firstborn, gave place to Ephraim, the second born. David, the second king of Israel, replaced Saul, the first.

Why? This is to demonstrate that the natural, as legitimate as it may be in and of itself, must make way for the spiritual. The “first Christian” must go to make room for the “second.” The Lord was taking me away to make room for the new, as He must do with all Christians. This was that overcoming.

Isn't it interesting that Cain was the first one of mankind recorded to bring a sacrifice to the Lord? And of him it is written that he was of the evil one (1 John 3:12). He was also the firstborn. His sacrifice was rejected, unlike that of Abel, his younger brother.

Particle - Overbeeks to Repent

For weeks I was struggling with the thought that I had to go to the neighbors next door and call them to repentance. Finally, on August 21, I obeyed. I told them that they were mocking God in all their ways, and that I wished to help them in any way I could. What came of it, I don't know, except that they weren't friendly with me. Whoever enjoys hearing they need to repent? Is that perhaps why they killed the prophets, sawed Isaiah in half, beheaded John the Immerser and James the apostle, crucified Jesus, and stoned Stephen?

Particle - Hard Memories, Thoughts, and Feelings

I now recalled, for the first time since I can remember, crying helplessly when I was taken to Auntie's and Uncle's in 1952, 46 years before. I was a few months younger than Jonathan, who was now coming seven. I was homesick, lonely, and scared. Auntie tried to comfort me, but how could I be comforted? The three miles away from home seemed like the other side of the world to me.

I now cried out to the Lord, tormented, forlorn, confounded, anxious, and bitter. I didn't know what to do. I was overwhelmed by everything - work, bad deals, relationships askew, loneliness, defeats, troubling, and unpleasant neighbors. “**Lord, where am I? For how long? I'm vile, I am; yet I preach as though everyone else is vile. My letters are full of condemnation and judgment. Who am I to preach or speak, being as I am?**”

A thought hit me, as I contemplated a favorable change in circumstances. “**That's not what I want. I want to change. If I don't change, circumstances always do and may only get worse, and I'll still have my problem. I want to change.**”

Particle - God's Wisdom of the 240th Hour

I was disconcerted about how I had failed to remain isolated from people to the very end of my fast. In the last hour of the ten-day fast, Jamie, the neighbor boy, came to the door and I failed to resist, being reluctant to offend him. But I realized the Lord had left me with my infirmity and it was manifest in that very failure. He wanted me to serve Him **with** my infirmities and saw to it that it would remain that way. I could have no claim to fame or to any righteousness of my own. I was thankful for this realization or revelation.

Particle - The Lord Has Come

So many Christians think in terms of the Lord having come 2,000 years ago. Many think He will come once more, physically, and usher in a new age of peace, establishing His Kingdom. One writer, Preston Eby, said that He has come many times and will continue to do so many times. It suddenly occurred to me that He came to me, firstly, in a dream in 1972, then in repentance in

1973; He came again and gave me His Spirit in 1975, and now He was here. He had come and manifest Himself once again to me. Then on this day, July 4, 1998, He spoke:

"I am here. I am in you and you are in Me. I come, I have come, and I will come. Do you need your deliverance, your healing? I am it. You enter your provision by faith. You enter into your rest by ceasing from your labors to accomplish; you do nothing. Labor to enter that rest. With all your heart, do nothing to enter in. Cease from all effort... it is vain. And when you cease, turning away from yourself, your own strength, your own effort, then will I come! Behold, I am at the door and you know I am there, here. If any man hear My voice and open the door, I will come in to him and will dine with him, and he with Me."

These are some of the final words to the last church (Revelation 3:14-22) - peculiar, perhaps appropriate, and timely. Lastly, He says He grants the overcomer to be seated on the throne.

Eighty-eight days before this time, I went to Dr. Michael Pratt and received a clean bill of health.

Eighty-eight days from now was to be Yom Kippur (Sept 30). The Hebrew holy days have often figured into my experience.

(Read further to see the significance of the number 88.)

Particle - Jonathan's Vision Series: An Unsavory, Non-dangerous Character

Because of our business location being difficult to find, we needed to put up directional signs. Without any competitive motive or ill intent, we put one up on the road most commonly used by people to find their way to us, which happened to be the road to Broxburn Vegetables, as well. Paul De Jonge immediately took offense and put his signs up on other of our roads to cut our traffic flow off and direct it to his farm.

Jonathan promptly had a series of visions. First, he saw a cartoon character rat, dressed in brown clothing and a big top hat. He climbed on a horse, via a fence, and cleared his throat, as he pointed his right arm and index finger to the sky.

Next, Jonathan saw this character ride into sandy places with standing dead trees. He then saw him ride into a poor part of a city with old buildings. Next, he saw that the rat rode into a narrow canyon between two mountains.

Jonathan saw yet another scene, one in which the character was no longer on the horse but standing with his hands in his front pockets, looking at about 10 loaded cannons, with no one there to man them.

Particle - Rich Poor Men and Poor Rich Men

Those seeking after wealth are very poor. The more they gather, the poorer they become. It isn't how much a covetous man has, but how much there is yet left to gain, that counts to him - it is a bottomless pit, a journey with no end.

The covetous man focuses not on what he has, but on what he doesn't have; therefore is he poor.

On the other hand, the liberal man doesn't focus on what has been given, but on what he has left to give; and so he's rich, always having something. The amount one possesses is irrelevant to contentment.

Particle - A Revelation of the Visiting Group

One day as I was on the lawn weeding, it came to me that the Mills, Ogdens, Knorrs, and Barny Knelsen were of the synagogue of Satan. I also knew the promise of God:

"Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you" (Revelation 3:9).

Particle - Doing Right in the Wrong Place

While exterminating ants in the driveway, Jonathan asked why I was killing nature. I reminded him that we also killed the sawfly worms eating the spruce trees. "Yes, but ants do good things," he replied. I agreed and pointed out that all creatures do good things where they belong, but when they go where they don't belong, they do harm (the ants were removing sand from under the patio stones).

Then I thought of how we are all in evil when doing that which is not our place or duty to do, even if what we do, in itself, isn't wrong.

Particle - Am I True or False?

It so bothered me to be constantly viewed by everyone as a false prophet. What bothered me most was not the rejection, though unpleasant enough, but the prospect that maybe I was speaking and walking out of my own heart. After all, so many from all walks said I was false - multitudes, high and low, rich and poor, young and old, religious and otherwise, intelligent and simple, male and female, neighbors, relatives, and strangers. By some I was even intensely hated, so much that they would kill me if they had opportunity. So I asked, "Lord, are You with me? Am I with You? Are You sending me, and if so, shouldn't and wouldn't I know it?"

I'd had conflict with many people - my whole life was one of conflict. There seemed to be no giving, no mercy, and no tolerance on my part. It seemed bad, and I knew I had my faults. There was, however, a Scripture that kept coming back to me over and over again: **"You love righteousness, and hate wickedness; therefore God, your God, has anointed you with the oil of gladness above your fellows" (Psalm 45:7).**

"The sons of those who afflicted you shall come bending low to you, and all who despised you shall bow down at your feet; they shall call you the City of the LORD, the Zion of the Holy One of Israel" (Isaiah 60:14 ESV).

(See also Isaiah 66:5-24.)

At the same time, there were the internal underlying, abiding assurance, peace, and joy beyond the intellect that can't be described or understood; they were just there, anchoring me through the constant billows of life.

Particle - July 10, 1998

July 10th came and went with no apparent event. It wasn't until the next day I realized that July 10th was very eventful. I received in some special, secret way that there is no effective effort involved at all on our part to make ourselves acceptable to God. The secret is to acknowledge that we can do nothing and that we are entirely unprofitable in our ways before Him. We can only trust and look to Him; there's no other way.

I heard myself saying to others, "I don't expect you to change yourself. You can't do it. Just recognize your need for that change. Believe what I'm saying, submit to it, accept it, and seek after the Lord, trusting Him to change you." Those of the synagogue of Satan presume to make His righteousness their own and theirs His, as though it originated with, or could be claimed and possessed in, their own strength. It doesn't happen.

I also realized it was on **July 10th** the Lord told me the job (His work) was finished. I would not be dying. I knew I could tell nobody about this; they wouldn't believe me, except for maybe one (Jonathan). I certainly didn't think Marilyn, Lois, Sean, or Paul would believe me.

Marvelous how the Lord did this, just marvelous, and so unobtrusively, so quietly, so simply, so secretly. Indeed, He does hide His great things from the wise and prudent and reveal them to babes.

And I had a third realization on that **July 10th**! It was that the Lord would provide all things for me. My age and inabilities wouldn't matter at all. He communicated this truth in such a way that it excited me. Suddenly, I had a renewed desire to study the Scriptures more and in greater depth. I hadn't been able to read them studiously for quite some time.

Particle - I Make Jonathan Ill

Around July 12th, Jonathan and I worked on landscaping in the hot weather. I was demanding of him and didn't pay attention to his needs for rest and water, not believing his complaints, not that he did much of that. He fell ill. I didn't realize until days after the work and well into his illness that he had been dehydrated and suffered heat stroke. His body was so hot, and he was so ill.

Oh, how I have hated myself for all the times I've hurt him! How strange that though I had the desire to protect him, I so often did the very opposite. I asked the Lord to heal him. Two days later, Jonathan was reviving.

My idolatry of Jonathan was killing him. God was not well pleased with my affection for him. At least that is my explanation for why I, in brutishness and ignorance, have done him so much harm without intent or deliberate effort.

Particle - Paul Confesses Hating Me

On July 13th, Paul faxed me a note from Montana, confessing how he had hated me. Admitting it to himself, it was gone, he said. He went on to talk about the Feast of Tabernacles, the time of restoration. He likened it to the Lord coming to the Feast secretly in John 7. He was so right. I faxed him back, agreeing.

But I was angry at his confession and brought up all the things that made sense in light of it, the things that indicated he had been bitter toward me for some time. I still felt like he was at enmity

with me. Marilyn received that he was our enemy. Strange that she would have received something like that of Paul, considering how she conducted herself with me. Did it not occur to her?

Particle - Resurrection Reigns Replete

The Lord spoke to me of His being the Resurrection. To the unbelieving, losses are irretrievable and failures irreversible, but to those who believe, we have hope in all things because of the truth, the *present reality* of the Resurrection.

The Lord was “too late” for Lazarus. Each day is filled with myriads of dead Lazaruses, but each day is also filled with myriads of resurrections or, rather, *the Resurrection*. Seed falls and produces a new plant; the sun sets to rise again; we tire, rest, and are re-energized; the sick get healed; we face needs each day, and each day needs are met; we are ignorant, and we learn; one thing goes, and its replacement comes; seasons, cycles, and reproductions - all displaying the Resurrection, the One by Whom “**all things consist.**”

People who die will revive. Even the nation of Israel was raised from the ashes after 1900 years and, in short order, attained to, and even surpassed, the power and accomplishment of many nations larger in size that have been around for centuries.

Particle - The Lord's Coming

How has the Lord's coming been manifested or declared to me?

One, as children, we enacted the crucifixion of Jesus, with Archie and Barb crucifying me as the Lord. It was my idea. Do many children do that?

Two, the Lord Jesus Christ appeared in a [dream](#) in 1972, the first time He made Himself known to me. In that dream, a man was walking with Him in His “coming.”

Three, shortly after I received repentance, Don Hafichuk [said](#) to me sarcastically, “You think you're a little Jesus!”

Four, once when praying and asking the Lord for Prince Albert, the Lord [said](#), “*I have given you the whole world.*”

Five, my song, [The Butterfly](#), prophesies of His coming in me, without my knowing it. Nobody sees or understands, not even I. Yet it keeps coming again and again. I believe it.

Six, there are the great prophecies that came forth from [Carroll Vance](#), [Jim Flynn](#), [Mickey Patrick](#), [Don Morrison](#), and the [Sioux believer](#) from South Dakota.

Seven, Dave Roberts [remarked](#) to me, saying in a taunting manner, “I suppose you're the two witnesses.” This was unprovoked and out of context of anything discussed at the time - an unusual remark.

Eight, Archie had a [rare insight](#) into my spiritual being, unseen by others, though his insight was given by devils, I believe. Devils saw and confessed things of Jesus that most people couldn't see (Matthew 8:29; Mark 5:7; Luke 8:28).

Nine, Marv Isom [prophesied](#) in Dauphin in 1977 that, *"This place will be famous"*; he saw a vision of my heart as that of a shepherd under the authority of the Shepherd, the Lord Jesus and His heart.

Ten, Marilyn had the [vision](#) of my entering the Golden Gate in the east wall of Jerusalem with Israeli government officials and businessmen.

Eleven, in 1984 (12 years after the dream in 1972 of His coming), the Lord [revealed](#) to me that I was that man of my 1972 dream, walking with the Lord.

Twelve, without being told, Delores knew who was that second man with the Lord, as did Kerri.

Thirteen, He once [spoke](#) saying, *"To other men at other times have I given the throne, but today I give you the throne. As I gave the throne to Solomon, so I give it to you.... You are My Solomon in this day."*

Fourteen, the Lord said that I was the Sabbath, His last and final day, that He took up His abode in me, resting in me, and I in Him.

Fifteen, once in the mid-eighties, when I told Lois I was the "second coming" of the Lord, she received a witness and marveled, rejoicing. This was only temporary, as I am sure it was with Peter, who, by the Father, saw that Jesus was the Christ. Not that I am the Christ; I'm not. Jesus is and He alone, but I come with Him as His prime ambassador in this day.

Sixteen, meeting Sandy McClimens but for a few minutes at Moon River in 1988, she [asked](#) me if I was God's emissary. Only the week before, she said she received that God came, or would come, in a man. I affirmed that I was His emissary.

Seventeen, once when Anders Neu and Quinn Van Liere harassed us on the phone, they asked me if I was the "second coming." When the police questioned me on the phone calls, I spoke as though I denied the Lord was coming by me, though I didn't directly deny it; nevertheless, I felt bad about doing that.

Eighteen, Danny Hafichuk had a dream in 1996 that indicated that what was happening was the biggest event in several centuries.

Nineteen, there are our various **July 10th** events (Day of Atonement).

Twenty, there is Bob Gregson's [dream](#) of me as a "very important personage."

Twenty One, I have been hated by all - no one else I know of has been hated among us as I have, often inexplicably so. I am always "the issue," the lightning rod.

Twenty Two, there are all the timings as recorded; big things are happening.

Twenty Three, I have always felt personally identified with these Scriptures: **"Is any so blind as My servant?" (Isaiah 42:19)**, as humbling as it is; and, **"He shall magnify the Law, and make it honorable" (42:21)**.

Particle - Sean a Bastard

It was quite obvious to me that Sean cared only about himself. He sulked when he wasn't glorified, pacified, praised, honored, loved, obeyed, catered to, listened to, or agreed with. I once called him something and he insisted I called him a bastard. I was right. He refused any correctional judgment.

Marilyn and I were in horrid strife. Any form or degree of criticism of her concerning the farm caused an instant flare-up from which I must jump back or get burned. I dared not criticize her handling of the farm, and if I criticized Sean especially, I touched the apple of her eye... both of them.

Perhaps I deserved some of the blame because she said that I expressed myself dogmatically, without tolerance, mercy, or patience.

I wrote: "Marilyn, if Sean does not change, repent, and he leaves, you're free to go with him because this I know, you'll never be happy with me - our marriage is finished. You go. I fully expect that if he left and you stayed, I'd have the most miserable creature to live with that one could imagine. Your remaining here would do nobody justice or service of any kind, least of all God; your legalism in remaining would mean *nothing* to Him and certainly nothing to me."

I spoke to Marilyn of the Lord's coming in me. We battled for the good part of the day, but there was a wrestling with God over this truth even in me - so hard to believe, impossible to understand.

Particle - Lois' Vision: Horse Leading Others

On July 19, 1998, Lois had a vision of a large sandy-colored horse with a long blond mane and fair face, leading a great herd of horses. She saw them in a "V" formation, he being in the lead, running with purpose.

Particle - Marilyn's Vision: Calf with No Sense of Atmosphere

Curiously, on the same day, Marilyn had a vision of a calf the same color as Lois's horse. It stood looking up, with "no sense of atmosphere" as Marilyn put it. I believed I was both the horse and the calf.

Particle - Paul's Apology

On July 21, 1998, Paul wrote:

Your fax arrived last Tuesday and I thought surely you were wrong. Oh, how wrong I have been! I have found out this past week the truth about my attitude and stance. I feel so, so sorry. I am so sorry. I have been your enemy; I have nurtured myself in independence, as separate. What a lie! I have no life independently - NONE. My life is with God, which is, or Who is, with you. I'm not just talking about the way things are, but what is, when all the sins and other gods are disposed of. The true desire of my heart. It is to be your friend and do your bidding.

I can tell you that the one thing I know is true, that you were wrong about, is that I intended to hurt you with the statement I made about Sean and Marilyn. I never intended to hurt you there or anywhere else.

I don't know if you can forgive me but I believe you will if you can. I want to do whatever, anything I can to be with you. That is all that matters to me.

If you have anything you can or want to say you can fax me today or tomorrow around noon. Otherwise, I will be in touch again soon (unless you tell me otherwise). Paul

Particle - Fife Faints and Falters

Lois called with concern for Sean, saying he was suffering serious memory lapses. They had all been under great pressure with so many responsibilities. It was decided that Sean should come to our home at Moon River and rest. This happened to be on **Day 666** from the day of Marilyn's [prophecy](#) of September 24, 1996.

I spent the day with Sean and found him to be very indecisive, realizing that Marilyn was making the decisions while he could only implement them. It occurred to me that the day was approaching when Sean would need to change or leave.

I told him Marilyn's 3-part prophecy was spiritual and that the parts were fulfilled, the first part about my being taken, and the second of my having a ministry like Moses. I was mistaken in that, however, as well as in the third part, telling him it had also been fulfilled of him and Marilyn marrying, even if not in physical consummation.

After being presumptuous in many matters and eating all the ice cream, Sean returned to the farm after a day. There, Marilyn convinced him I was wrong (and in a way I was, but not in the way she thought). She insisted that the prophecies would not be fulfilled until Sean believed them.

What? Is God's Prophetic Word wholly dependent on believing hearts receiving it to be fulfilled? Doesn't that notion effectively and conditionally transfer ultimate power from the Creator to the creature?

Sean called me and said he was standing on all Marilyn's prophecies and that they must yet be literally fulfilled. Believing that, he said, his mind cleared.

Ironically, I was glad I hadn't convinced Sean, but was able instead, even if unintentionally, to "*let it happen,*" as I had been commanded three times. Furthermore, if Marilyn was right and the prophecy of having a glorious ministry such as that of Moses was not yet fulfilled, I had very much to look forward to.

Particle - Marilyn's Dream: Prison Escapee

Marilyn had a strange dream on the night of July 26, 1998. She was confronted with a man wearing light blue prison garb coming into our midst, who had escaped from another realm and was not supposed to be there with us. He had "cast a mist" on others so that they could not know what he was all about or see that he was with them.

He disappeared and Marilyn asked the Lord to open her eyes so she could see him. She saw him proceeding to make himself comfortable on a beach among the people there. She then began to walk toward him with hands outstretched, saying, "In the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, go back to where you came from." She said he was an evil man and she had the impression that his time in prison was not yet completed.

Marilyn believed the man was Paul. I saw that it was Sean, though that wouldn't explain her commanding him in the Name of the Lord to leave, but then commanding Paul in such manner to leave wouldn't make any more sense. In her present state, Sean could think, say, or do no wrong. She worshipped the ground his foot touched. I had my breath taken away with incredulity at her blatant, contradictory partiality of, and blindness to, him. Had he not cast a spell on us? Had he not "made himself comfortable" with us, to the extent of taking over everything?

Had Paul ever done any such thing, even in part? Was she right about the man being Paul? Didn't both Paul and Lois receive an identical verse of Sean, independently of each other, which agreed with this dream being of Sean?

The others and I also had been blind to Sean and his ways. He despised Marilyn, her ways, and her beliefs, yet said he loved her as a wife. He despised Lois, as well as the others. He was flippant, caring about nothing and nobody but himself.

There was no fear of God in his heart, only fear of God's judgment on his wickedness. With that fear, he displayed a dedicated effort to escape, rather than to accept, the judgment. Indeed, he wanted the best of both worlds, though he spoke and appeared otherwise. He called Paul's letter of apology to me "pitiful." While I could understand the carnal man seeing it that way, I saw humility manifest in Paul that is found among saints, but entirely foreign and contemptible to the proud and wicked.

Les Mills called saying he saw Sean as one after the mastery without apprenticeship. In other words, he was after the throne without the cross, a thief and robber coming up some other way (John 10:1), dining at the banquet without a wedding garment (Matthew 22:12). Was this not representative of the stranger in Marilyn's dream? Was he not the one of whom I [prophesied](#), saying he would come as an angel and leave as a devil? Lois expected his fall to be imminent, saying it would be up to Marilyn to send him away.

Particle - Visit with Paul at Glacier

Paul faxed me on July 29, 1998, telling me how he was going through a successful process of forsaking Kerri. He also informed me that his neighbor, Deborah Speyer, a 47-year old single Jewish lady, invited him to her cabin at Lake McDonald, Glacier National Park in Montana, ostensibly afraid to be there by herself, having suffered a break-in and robbery in India, where she lived much of the time. He invited me to join him for a few days. I decided to go, and Marilyn was troubled about it. Jonathan would come with me.

We headed up on the 31st for the weekend. Paul did most of the talking. We did some hiking and canoeing, and Deborah made us an East Indian breakfast. We shared with her about God and faith. She wasn't interested; on the contrary, she was quite challenged, but we knew that seeds were planted to bear fruit in the future.

Particle - The Lord Tells Me Three Things

On the day we left for the US, the Lord told me He had done three things for us: **one**, He paid for and pardoned all our sins; **two**, He delivered us from the power of sin so that we were no longer prisoners of it; and **three**, He granted us to reign with Him. This I likened to a governor pardoning a criminal, setting him free, and then inviting him to be governor with him. Amazing! This I felt to share with Marilyn to be shared with the farm.

Why would I do that? There was a need to do so.

Particle - Son's Pain the Father's

When back in Lethbridge, while having another argument with Marilyn, I said to her, "Go! Get out!" repeatedly; I was so angry with her. Jonathan was there and interpreted the words to mean, "Get out completely, permanently!" which wasn't the intended meaning. I thought Marilyn knew what I meant yet allowed Jonathan to think as he did, and this enraged me when I saw Jonathan crying and pleading, so much so that I began to mean the interpretation he had believed.

Jonathan proceeded to go back and forth as arbiter, mediating, firmly and intelligently. It hurt so to see him suffer. Marilyn was so hard, so very hard. I cried perceiving her hardness. As they left for the farm, she was as hard as steel - cold and impersonal - it was the face I saw in both the [1976 dream](#) and the [1997 vision](#). Very disturbing, almost frightening - so hard, so hard....

I often asked myself if I was responsible for her hardness. Had my brutishness produced this fruit? More importantly, I asked the Lord, but He didn't reveal anything to me, though He had spoken to me of so many other matters.

Particle - The God of Self-Sufficiency

On the morning of August 11th, I awoke feeling my attitude to the farm, gathering people to it and promoting self-sufficiency, was idolatrous. In it all, I was looking for fulfillment, security, provision, and satisfaction, but ended up greatly frustrated. To so many, the "good, clean, simple, quiet life" on a farm or acreage, growing one's own food, is an idol. To idolaters, a farm is turned into a nightmare. As a result of that idolatry, I'd lost everything, including my family and my marriage. I thanked the Lord for this revelation.

Particle - Accepting Marilyn's Marriage to Sean

Marilyn praised and adored Sean as a hero, a god, though he had no use for me whatsoever. I told Marilyn that seeing as how I was supposed to be as good as dead, she loved Sean emotionally, romantically, and wistfully, and her prophecy said they would marry, that we should simply get on with it... the sooner the better.

The wait for my death had already been nearly two years. From the beginning, however, she was constantly declaring it to be in days. Marilyn considered divorce for the first time as a viable option, seeing the possibility that my death would not be a literal one. How darkened and contradictory in reasoning can one possibly be? One must break God's commandment to obey Him?!

We decided that we both had to accept her marrying Sean even though I was alive (which marrying she had little problem with). The hardest part for me would be if I were expected to continue in continuous fellowship with them thereafter. "This," I said, "would be worse than eating dog droppings off the lawn publicly." I said I wouldn't do it. "Divorce, if need be, yes, but don't expect me to enjoy having my nose rubbed in it for a moment, never mind constantly."

Marilyn pointed out that I never did want a wife, children, money, house, or farm. I had asked God not to give me those things, having some fear I might lose them, so... He gave me these things so that I might come through my fears. She said she could always see that I was His and that I desired nothing but Him, truly. How then could she be so right and I so wrong?

Realizing that the Lord could give me grace to endure anything, knowing that His rewards far outweigh the cost and that I wanted, above all, to walk with Him, I resigned and accepted even this last scenario of them marrying while I was alive. “Lord, You have my consent and, by Your grace alone, I both give it and submit to the reality. Frankly, I can’t see how I can possibly do it but by Your grace.”

On the heels of this submission and the revelation on farming and self-sufficiency, I received more revelation and wrote [Agriculture - Abel’s Occupation](#).

Particle - September ‘96 in *The Bible Code*

Reading *The Bible Code* by Michael Drosnin, I found it interesting that he said September 1996 would be the beginning of the “End of Days.” Marilyn was interested too, of course, and related her apparent vindication to Sean, intimately, passionately, and whisperingly.

This provoked me to tell Jonathan that she loved Sean more than me. He argued that it wasn’t true. I said, “Ask her if you want.” He asked, pressed her, and wouldn’t relent. She tried to evade his question, but finally said, “I love Dad more.”

“See, Dad? I told you. Mom wouldn’t lie to me.”

“She once lied to me, son.”

“She loves you more, Dad. I know it.... Dad, I just had a prophecy.”

Silence.

“Do you want to hear it, Dad?”

“Yes, son.”

“Mom loves Sean more than you.”

“That’s the Lord, Jonathan; the prophecy is true.”

He told her. Then, in what I consider to be his dissatisfaction, he thought he heard that the prophecy wasn’t true, that it wasn’t from the Lord, and said, “I’m not sure about this one.”

I said, “The first is true, Jonathan.”

This happened on Day 700 after [Marilyn’s prophecy](#).

Genesis 7:24 says the waters of Noah prevailed for 150 days, at which time **“God remembered Noah.”** Which equates to August 25th of the Gentile calendar. This happens to be the 700th day of Marilyn’s prophecy.

(A thought in retrospect, as I edit in 2015: Knowing Jonathan’s precious honesty and unwavering commitment to doing right that followed in the next two years from that 700th day, I believe he had good reason to question what he heard. I believe Marilyn was forced to be honest with him when he pressed her.)

Particle - More Inner Conflict

I was discouraged. I hadn't changed at all - I got angry, worried, ate too much, watched TV I shouldn't, and judged others; I didn't pray, give thanks, fast, or give alms. I did nothing good and everything evil. I paid the price, but to no avail. I continued to do evil. Marilyn hated me more and more; I dug the hole deeper with her; I saw it and seemed powerless to change my ways. I was to let go and stop trying altogether, yet I wasn't to yield to temptations.

I was confused, heartbroken, and desolate. Enemies laughed, and my wife with them. I was a spectacle, a source of pity and derision both. The people viewed me as anti-Christ; I saw that nature in me yet was persuaded I wasn't that way.

I thought I wouldn't speak harshly to anyone again, but Marilyn brought home constant reports of the selfishness and wickedness of the people at the farm until I became fed up and angry. I spoke and, lo, it was evidently needful to speak harshly - I called them "pigs." And results for the better seemed to occur. Truly, they'd been swine devouring themselves. I spoke it, and the activity subsided... apparently. But if arrested, to what end? For how long? It always reverted to former ways. It seemed like a losing battle and doom was inevitable.

Marilyn held her tongue and masked her true thoughts and feelings. Yet, I saw a division in her, unless I was deceived.

Conflicts abounded, some with Marilyn, but primarily within. I experienced deep sorrow, insecurity, perplexity, and fear... of loss, of the unknown, of condemnation. I was being taken away for transgression. I suffered the shame of being stripped naked before all, the pain of separation from my son, and the ugly reality of my wife's heart being steadfastly set on another man.

On August 31st, I apologized to Marilyn for all I'd been and done. I was confounded, doubting many things. I didn't know what to believe. What had I heard from the Lord, and what had I heard from myself? I didn't know.

I suffered deep helplessness - like the kind I experienced as a 7-year-old boy in 1953 (Jonathan's age at this point) when bullied by those much bigger and older, with no defense, hope, help, or sympathy from anyone. There was nothing I could do at that time but suffer for a year or more. Then the school year ended and I was taken entirely out of my old circumstances - home, enemies, school, bullies - everything, and brought into companionship and new adventure.

The ordeal was over and I was transported into another life, befriended by a personable, joyous, popular Gordon, one my age. It was marvelous, so different. It could be compared to dying and going to Heaven, though not idyllic by any means. I looked for that kind of transport from my troubles now.

It wasn't until around the time of this editing that I realized I had been delivered from a Gordon six years my senior, who hated and scornfully bullied me, to a Gordon my age who was thrilled to have me for his choicest friend - from the very worst to the very best one can expect in this world. What are the chances of such a coincidence? Was this not another allegory God created to display His sovereignty? First the night of sorrow and suffering, then the day of peace and joy (Psalm 30:5)?

Who says there is no God?

Particle - Marilyn's Desire

Seventy days before **November 10th**, on September 1st, in the night, Marilyn expressed a desire that she and Sean be free to express their feelings for each other.

Article - Mickey Patrick's Problems

[Mickey Patrick](#) called to talk and reported many troubles. He said his mother was dying of bone cancer. He was forced to commit his father to a psych ward because of violence and irrationality, though he was later released. Mickey's son was beat up in a park and police were involved. Mickey also packed in his restaurant business, saying it was too demanding, and planned to focus on a home for handicapped kids.

Were my troubles so bad?

Article - Reins on Jonathan

We had to deal with Jonathan and make decisions on things like the annual circus, friends' birthday parties, swimming at pools and beaches with the scantily dressed, toxic candy and other unhealthy treats, restaurants, movies, silly fads and mercenary fashions, disturbing music, enticing and numerous games and toys, risky trampolines, internet influences, religious issues, vaccinations, GMO's, tantalizing, deceptive commercials for so many products not worth buying or consuming... the list goes on.

Where to draw the line? I didn't want to suffocate Jonathan or disease him with the Preacher's Kid Syndrome. I saw that Marilyn could be rather too liberal for my liking and I didn't know that I could trust her judgment. I also saw her looking to Jonathan for comfort and solace, as she didn't get it from me in a way that satisfied her, which could have resulted in pampering and spoiling him. (Wasn't she getting any solace or satisfaction from Sean?)

Discipline wasn't so hard to be enforced with Archie's children. Now we had our "only child of our old age" and our heart strings were tested. It was hard denying Jonathan privileges and pleasures he desired while he witnessed other children having fun. What should we allow or not allow? What was important and what wasn't? Thankfully, the answer would come in due time.

Article - A Beloved Baal Worshipper

As I perused some of his books, I knew T. L. Osborn was my enemy and not a man of God. When Peter preached at Pentecost, he notified the people of the evil they had done. There was conviction of sin, the foundation of the salvation process, establishing the need. Osborn had no use whatsoever for conviction of sin. He was saving the carnal man, and therefore carnal men thronged him, hearing exactly what they wanted to hear. He required no price from them. There was no cross involved to qualify people. So it is with all those who associated with Osborn - Kenneth Copeland, Oral Roberts, and every other famous and popular preacher - yes, **every** other.

Article - Prophetic Words by Gene and Les

Les Mills and I talked by phone. He said he and Gene sought the Lord and received that the Lord would not be physically taking me. Gene said my calling and election were sure. Gene and Vicky were coming to stay with the Mills and hoped to be gathering with others this winter.

Les and Gene more than once remarked that there were two of me. They said that when they talked face-to-face with me, I was friendly, and then, days later, they would get my hard letters. My problem seemed to be that while I visited with people, I saw very little if any of the issues, but as I considered and prayed, I received understanding of the people and the things they said.

Sometimes this would be within three days, sometimes longer. I've often wished I could be like some who are so very capable of sizing up a person or situation, sometimes in seconds, and make their required decisions. While I haven't seen this kind of ability in any man of God (I haven't seen another man of God, for that matter), I have seen it often in great men of the world.

Mark and Amanda decided to stay away, not knowing what to make of me. Helgrid, Barny's wife, was afraid of me because of what I had written to Barny about her. Why was she afraid?

Particle - I Am Evil

I wrote in my journal:

I am evil, a hypocrite, a destroyer; always was. There has been no change in me. I've tried to believe, think, and speak right; to love, obey, submit, repent, suffer, accept, thank, rejoice, and do and be all those things I thought were expected of me as a believer in Christ. I've failed miserably and suffered the loss of almost all things. Being blind, I probably don't see clearly at this point that I've lost **everything**.

I criticize, condemn, point the finger, "judge," "smite with the fist," "lay heavy burdens," enslave, impose, demand, trouble, rail, find fault - always. I chafe at things I don't like; I fret, stew, and verbally, violently retaliate.

I'm that meddling, destructive son of perdition, man of sin, false prophet, anti-Christ, accuser of the brethren, devil, adversary to God, to all good, and to all mankind. I am "that wicked one." I'm vile and have nothing to do with God or He with me.

No wonder I've lost everything! No wonder I'm hated by all, including my ex-wife. I'm a damned soul and have neither the ability nor desire to change. God knows I've wanted to be different, or does He know that I haven't wanted to be different? God damn my soul!

If I don't destroy myself, God will. If He won't, I will - I've done it. All these years, for decades, I hoped for change, deliverance, resurrection, and healing. I prayed, begged, wished, and cried for it. God hasn't answered. I'm shit. I don't see any better with anybody else, except that, unlike me, they don't get on everyone else's case, condemning others; that's the difference. It's the judging that has slain me.

Particle - A Hell Mate Instead of a Help Mate

Marilyn and I had been in disagreement ever since we first got married. Even on the day after receiving the Spirit of God, I was suddenly annoyed with her. Why? We'd been about as compatible as fire and water, fighting as prey and predator. I know I've been brutish, selfish, ignorant, inconsiderate, proud, miserable, stingy, covetous - you name it. Was it all my fault? I think it was both our faults, but the great question is: As born-again believers, how is it we were in such great disagreement?

Earned and deserved or not, I'd had a life of resistance from Marilyn. Once experiencing the very opposite for a brief time with [Lois' help](#) on a little repair project in 1997, it felt so good to have cooperation. I thought, "Wow! Have I missed out! Is this ever different!" It was so pleasant in contrast to what was the story of our lives - constant strife.

Understand: The situation with Lois had nothing to do with romance or marital notions; Lois is my mother's sister. It was strictly the experience of having a willing helper's cooperation that spoke to me.

I never ever had that harmony in working with Marilyn - not a hint of it. There was only a mode of peace between us if she worked alone and I worked alone. We could never work together, not without bloodletting and fur-flying. I'm ashamed to admit this, but it's true.

Marilyn, it seems, always expected me to be her helpmate, doing things her way. I was critical of the Wheelers who lived across the street from us. "Boy, does she control him!" I would say. Marilyn would talk of how Kay would work Al up and send him out raging at the things and people troubling her. Kay did it to me by Al on [November 10, 1989](#). But I now saw it was no different with us, years before we ever saw it with them. "She jerks his chain," I would say, and truly, I, without realizing it, was speaking from experience. Perhaps Marilyn just had a more subtle way of doing it.

Sean would be her next "go-fer." He was a helper. "See how he helps me," she once said to me. Indeed; understandable. In his state, he loved her, cooperated as a son, as one younger and in need, and received from her what he may have desired from his mother and never got. And Marilyn ate it up.

Everywhere I looked, I saw wives dominating men, controlling, manipulating, and making the final decisions in the things in which the wives chose to rule. Are women the weaker vessels? How? Physically? Does that count for anything? Doesn't that make them more powerful, as with babies that get anything they want because they cry and are cute and helpless? They both bear rule with tears among other things. Their power is made strong in weakness. The difference between women and babies is that women can think and strategize, tempt and persuade. Didn't Jezebel rule Ahab, king of Israel?

I must confess I was bitter. Like a calf to the slaughter I went, knowing nothing. I'd been a prisoner of my past, of my internal troubles, my infirmities, and my marriage. If there was to be any mercy or redemption, it would feel good, so very good indeed.

The dog that's been leashed a long time will run when let loose, if his spirit isn't destroyed. Let a cow out of a corral after being penned up a long time, and she'll fly out the gate with her tail up.

Marilyn said we were never one, never a team, much less husband and wife. Was it either of our faults? Or both? I couldn't blame her, though I was bitter. If anything, she needed healing and not hurting, deliverance and not condemnation. I think we both needed healing and deliverance.

Particle - Lost in Darkness

I didn't know my right hand from my left, good from evil, right from wrong, grace from Law. I'd lost all judgment and spiritual sight. There was a duality raging within me. I was reminded of [Lois' vision](#) and of my [two battle visions](#). This appeared to be my Armageddon. Sean told me I needed to believe the literal, physical fulfillment of Marilyn's prophecies. I didn't believe him.

Particle - Seven Things the Lord Tells Me of “The Seven”

In struggling about the hard letters I’d been sending Les and Penny, Barny and Helgrid, Mark and Amanda, Gene and Vicky and others, the Lord told me four things: **one**, *be what you are*; **two**, *write Gene (as you purpose)*; **three**, *the Knorrs and Mills don’t know the Law and despise it*; **four**, *don’t get familiar with them*; **five**, *they are of the synagogue of Satan*; **six**, *by them, Satan disputes about your body*; and **seven**, *you don’t have much time left*.

This **November 10th** would be 777 days from the prophecy. Lamech, Noah’s father, who prophesied of Noah giving the people of God rest, was 777 years old when he died. It was on **November 10th** (forty days after the first day of the tenth month) that Noah opened the window of the ark. On February 27th, Noah and his family left the ark. It was about, if not precisely, that date that I was first converted to the Lord in 1973 (I wish I had kept a record of the exact day).

Who says there is no God?

Particle - Les Mills, Mark Ogden, and Gene Knorr Receive Revelation of Us

Les came for a visit on September 11, 1998. He told me he saw hanky-panky going on with Sean and Marilyn. His wife, Penny, didn’t believe him. Mark Ogden had said he saw Marilyn as the kingpin of the farm, running everything. His wife, Amanda, didn’t believe him. Mark also said that, in praying about the letters I sent them, he felt that I was hurting because of where Marilyn was at and what she was doing.

In my surprise and perhaps because it was so different having someone see things my way during this difficult time, I showed Les [my prophecy](#) and what was going on in our midst. The Lord had just commanded me not to get familiar with them. What I did contradicted that commandment. I was disobedient, whether deliberately or otherwise.

Les told me he wanted to go to the farm and speak to Marilyn and Sean. I told him to do what he believed he needed to do. This was on September 12th, **precisely 5 months or 153 days** from the day they appeared at the farm on April 12th.

Particle - Vision: I Losing Ground, Repenting, Regaining

When I cursed myself and my lot, Jonathan had a vision. He saw a man on a camel in the distance, in a desert with sand and flat thistles, which looked harmless. The man wore a helmet. In the near distance there were mountains and, closer yet, palm trees.

Suddenly the man disappeared and reappeared, landing in the foreground, the camel remaining where it was. He pointed his index finger upward and above it was a red “1” bordered in gold. I said, “That’s me. In cursing, I’ve just lost ground in my way, with an oasis close by. The reality of victory was so close, yet so far because of my attitude. The Lord is also taking away my camel - which is life in a desert.”

Jonathan then said, “I just had another vision. The man walked back to the camel and got on.” I said, “In confessing my fault, the Lord has permitted me back on the camel.” I had no reason to curse and bemoan my lot - the thistles were harmless, and I was provided with the necessary means to accomplish what was required.

Particle - News of Gord and Joan Fuller

I last saw [Gord Fuller](#) in Winnipeg at the Kenneth Copeland “Crusade” in 1980 when we were there with Art and Doreen Beals. We were glad to see him and invited him to our home, but plainly the feelings weren’t mutual. Gord was contemptuous of us and boastful of his works, claiming even to have brought the dead back to life.

Les Mills, who seemed to know many people on a personal basis, knew Gord and reported to us of happenings with the Fullers. Joan Fuller ended up in the hospital seriously ill and was supposed to have died. Gord prayed for her and she seemed to come back to life. He went home to make preparations for her homecoming when he received a call that she had passed away. (I’m almost certain I don’t have all the details accurate, but the report was along these lines in essence and principle, if not in detail.)

Gord was ultimately kicked out of his church because of some sort of disagreement, and his daughter married a no-good preacher who claimed to have received the Spirit but hadn’t. Gord withdrew from society for some time, but finally came out and married a woman much younger than he, and at this point, Les said they had four children.

How news gets around! What a small world! Were these things true? Les had no reason to lie to me, viewing Gord as a friend and speaking highly of him at times, saying he was a man of true miracles, delivering people from devils and being sought by many for healing. What did they have to say about me? It didn’t matter.

Particle - Vision: I Land on Another Planet

During the time that the Mills, Knorrs, and Ogdens were involved with us, I had a vision. I saw myself in a space suit, self-contained, landing on a foreign world, as if on a desolate planet. As I landed, I saw about half a dozen persons in similar suits running toward me from a distance. They were equidistant apart, spread out about thirty or forty feet from each other, in a straight line across from me.

I couldn’t tell if they were friend or foe. While my suit was white, their suits were off-white. Suspecting or realizing them to be foes, I rushed them head-on to break through their line and keep going. I was stocky and powerful and almost angry. I drove my fist through the midsection of the first one, demolishing him on the spot. I kept going, not looking back, but I wondered if they were going to turn about and come after me.

I concluded that the persons of the vision were Les, Gene, Mark, and their wives. They were out to destroy me. As it turns out, they showed their colors and went on to suffer the fruits of their ways. It wasn’t good for them, and none of them would listen to me.

Particle - Jonathan’s Guidance Kept Private

On the night of September 14th, Jonathan told me he received guidance from the Lord, which he said he had the choice whether to share with me or not. He said he didn’t have to tell me. I suppose he didn’t.

Particle - Five Consecutive Days of Significant Events

From September 20-24, 1998, there were five significant events:

September 20th - Barny Knelsen removed his cloak of godliness and attacked us. This day was **88 days** after Jonathan's vision of the two boulders and **88 days** to November 17th, the day Noah's dove returned with an olive leaf in its bill. I saw this as a turning point for me, being able to accept Barny's attack with peace and conviction that he represented the enemy and that I was firmly founded on the Rock of Ages, the Truth. At one time, I would have faltered and fainted in such circumstances.

September 21st - Rosh Hashanah, the beginning of the Jewish year. The Feast of Tabernacles has been very significant to us, particularly the **10th day of the seventh month** (July 10th on the Gentile calendar), the Day of Atonement, nine days after Rosh Hashanah on the Jewish calendar.

September 22nd - The first day of Jonathan's eighth year, "eight" representing new things.

September 23rd - I completed and sent a six-page letter to the Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, and Barny Knelsen. This finalizing letter drew the battle line and concluded my assessment of their spiritual position and nature, publicly declaring so. I see this as the fulfillment of the vision I had of stepping on a new planet and going on the offensive with those difficult to distinguish as friends or enemies, and also fulfillment of the prophecy from Don Morrison of my foot stepping on foreign soil.

(On March 13, 2015, I googled Mark and Amanda Ogden and found Amanda's [obituary](#). She died on January 16, 2014.)

September 24th - The anniversary of Marilyn's prophecy, around which many events and timings are divinely assembled.

Particle - My Circumstances Do Not Rule

I found something very significant within me in the situation with these people. In times past, I would speak to others of their sins in boldness only if all was right and comfortable with me in my circumstances. However, if things weren't right for us, for example if we had sickness, financial pressures, automotive problems, or any other troubles, I would not only be reticent to speak to others and address their wrongs in no uncertain terms, I would grovel and even go about apologizing for past harshness, criticism, judgmentalism, and such, as with the Taals.

But now, in spite of circumstances as severe as I have rarely known, which circumstances were seen and judged by my enemies as evil, I stood boldly addressing them, without wavering or doubting. In fact, I rejoiced! I now served not in self-righteousness ("If all is well with me, God is with me; if all is not well with me, God is not with me, so who am I to speak?") but in the Lord's righteousness, with my infirmities, as it pleased the Lord. This was new, this was different; this was great and wonderful.

Particle - The Judgment of Barny Knelsen

Barny, hearing of Marilyn's prophecy and having received my September 23rd letter to him and the others, declared her prophecy witchcraft and all of us in witchcraft. He particularly resented what I had to say about him and Helgrid. It struck at his pride and self-righteousness. I wrote:

What is Helgrid afraid of? She's afraid of *me*. She's afraid of the truth, of the Lord, of having to make a final decision one way or another, of choosing the truth, of whether or not she would know the truth when it came in a sea of conflicting views, opinions, doctrines, and

claims, having to choose reality. She's afraid of the conflict that would naturally arise within her and from her husband, whom she, in her heart, knows is in darkness and in whom she cannot therefore be confident, but rather must be insecurely skeptical. That is Helgrid.

This is a part of what I wrote to Barney in a public letter to them all:

Barney Knelsen, you are a damned fool (these words not used loosely). I have heard your speech now on a few occasions. I repeat: You, sir, are a damned fool. You say the Father "affirms you as His son," but I say that you neither know Him nor do you care to. You are full of works, the works of men, walking in the paths of the destroyer, destroying, and are utterly faithless.

Full of contradiction, you seek to be a hero, a savior; you seek the glory of men and honor of men and, yes, you very much do seek to have authority and power over others, all if possible. Your eye is not at all single. You too are proud, presumptuous, and very ignorant... ignorant of God, ignorant of His ways, ignorant of the Scriptures and the power of them, and contemptuous of His Laws because contemptuous of Him.

You're also ignorant of basic, earthly matters of which you ought not to be ignorant if you had a shred of concern for justice and truth and righteousness. You're a manpleaser, but you hate all those you flatter with your absurdities and blasphemies, feigning love and sincerity. You're a bastard who refuses learning, correction, discipline, and the entry of truth that you might be saved.

You know it all and will not listen to anything except in the way of bare necessity in terms of social grace and manners. Even there you fail miserably to conceal your pretensions.

Particle - Marilyn's Vision: Gene Knorr in Darkness

Marilyn had a vision of Gene. He was in darkness. A light was shone on him, and he shielded his eyes from it because not acquainted with the light and rejecting it. I had been trying to share the truth with him.

Particle - So Strong and So Weak

"I'm damn good at what I do."
"I'm the only real one around here."

Trevor Benson saw himself as Rambo, a hero, constantly, egotistically living in a dream world. He was forever promoting himself, a legend in his own mind. "Trevor the Great" he would scrawl in the sand. Yet so much of what he planned needed prevention, and everything he touched needed repair, redoing, and supervision. A child can't be left to itself in circumstances requiring maturity. When would he change? Why was he so bent on self-glorification? How could he be so blind to himself?

People liked Trevor; he would always smile childishly, looking for attention and, in his vanity, would interpret scorn, sarcasm, and insults as compliments, or he would welcome almost any attention as good. People used him in his simplicity. He needed protection from others and from himself.

Particle - God Comes in Appearance of Evil

If the Lord comes with clouds (Revelation 1:7), disguised and shrouded, and if light must be paralleled to goodness and darkness to evil (Isaiah 45:7), it is necessary that He appears evil. Did He not say that He comes as an evil entity - a thief (Revelation 16:15)?

Consider: Noah came as a fool; Abraham as a transient; Jacob as a trickster and supplanter, cheating his own brother; Israel, the chosen people of God, as a wandering, slavery-class people; Moses as a desert loser; Joseph as a criminal and rapist; David as a murderer; Jesus' mother Mary as a fornicator; John the Baptist as a madman; the Son of God as a presumptuous, poor, uneducated commoner; and the apostle Paul as a treacherous, seditious, self-seeking troublemaker. If light is to be concealed, the only option is to darken it. If God, being good, must come concealed, must He not come as one evil or unacceptable?

Why must He come concealed? Because we must go by faith and not by what is seen. Jesus didn't come to join us in this realm of darkness, but to bring us into His Kingdom of Light. We must enter not by sight but by faith.

Particle - Satan Comes in Appearance of Good

You could say then, "Hitler came as evil so maybe he was as God or was representing Him." No, Hitler came as good. He preached virtue and all good things until his real nature and agenda were exposed. Religion also comes as noble and godly, but in the end, it perverts and destroys all that is good. Does not Satan, whom Jesus calls the liar, thief, and murderer, come as an angel of light and his ministers as those in righteousness (2 Corinthians 11:13-15)?

Here is the judgment the Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, and Knelsens would have made on the following: They would have spared all those in Canaan. They would have spared Agag and all the livestock, as did Saul, who pretended to do it in piety. Unlike Solomon, they would have spared Adonijah, Shimei, Joab, and especially Abiathar the priest, because he was a priest. They would have condemned Abraham for purposing to sacrifice his son, denouncing his intention as abominable. They would have spared Ananias and Sapphira, comforted Esau, and rebuked Jacob and his mother for stealing Esau's birthright and blessing. On the other hand, they would have crucified the Lord and stoned Stephen, then garnished their tombs (all of which they did indeed do).

Particle - More Peculiar Dates and Timings

September 30, 1998 marked the end of the **third year** of the farm. It was also Yom Kippur, or the Hebrew equivalent to **July 10th**, and this day was **40 days to November 10th**.

On October 1st, the day we took possession of the farm, Noah could see the tops of the mountains.

Particle - Jason Receives Direction

Lois' son, Jason, was calling about once every 3 weeks from the Remand Center in Red Deer while awaiting trial. Lois didn't know what to say to him and was praying for an answer. On October 1st, I received a Word from the Lord for him. He was to confess and acknowledge his guilt before all and God would be with him to keep him. If he attempted to avoid answering for his crime, God would be against him. I gave the message to Lois to give to him.

That evening Jason called, and Lois gave him the message. One, two, three, four steps in one day - she asked, I received the Word, Jason called, and she gave him the message.

Who says there is no God?

Particle - Wives Rule Over Husbands

I learned that Marilyn had ruled my life. I didn't know it until I had the opportunity to come away and spend much time alone. As I reflected, I began to realize that everywhere I turned, I saw wives ruling husbands. It may be subtle or obvious, directly or indirectly, deliberately or unconsciously, but it is so.

This is what is known as the "original sin." It is also referred to as the "fall of man" in the Garden of Eden. What is not specified is that man turned from obedience to God to follow his wife. She subjected herself to the serpent, and therefore the man, following his wife, was made subject to the serpent instead of to God.

Where the woman rules the man, salvation is not complete. I know of no exceptions to the reality of female dominance, at least not in our society, though it may appear otherwise. Even where men beat their wives, I see it as a struggle and rebellion against the power women exercise, in their weakness as well as their strength, and men have been powerless because having willfully abandoned God (when it comes to a proper relationship to God). This revelation led me to write The Vashti-Esther Transmutation.

Particle - Barney's Barrage

On October 4th, Barney Knelsen called, incensed about my letter to him. He raged while I had no choice but to be silent or hang up. I chose the former. He wouldn't listen to anything. He told me that I was playing games with them, that I was a warlock, a schizophrenic; two or three times he called me a jerk, mental, deluded, and anti-Christ. I was able to say, "If I'm wrong, all will be made manifest, and also if I'm right. I can do no other than to take the way that I take, lest I should disobey God. Let the Lord be judge over all of this."

He continued, saying I should get counseling. He said that I was guilty of blasphemy and that I was getting orgasmic pleasure in writing these letters, promoting myself, and that he had spoken to many people about me and they all faulted me, to a man. He declared that he demonstrated the fruit of the Spirit to everyone, particularly love, which I did not. He also asked me if I was planning on committing suicide.

I was surprised at his violent eruption and yet I wasn't. All the colors I saw hidden in him came out. I wasn't the least fazed by him and I knew the Lord would do what was needed with him.

He related a dream wherein he saw a stunt pilot flying upside down, in the process killing his wife. He said I was that pilot killing Marilyn. Marilyn and I both agreed that if there was anything to the dream, he was the man. In any case, with his religious antics, he was certainly killing Helgrid. She was a dead woman. How wicked the religious are!

Why did these people, this synagogue of Satan, confront me at this time? I looked the dragon in the face, seeing him for what he was; to see him for what he is, is to overcome him. I have overcome. Now it is the Lord's Day.

Then I heard these words, *"Because you have forsaken your life, having laid down your life for your wife, therefore will I give you a hundred wives, even hundreds."* I recall the Lord telling me

not long ago that *because I was willing to, and did forsake all (my all), therefore He was going to give me all (His all).*

Because Barny tried to prevent me from giving up my wife, and because he was selfishly protective of his, therefore he would lose his wife.

Particle - I Bless Marilyn

I wanted to reverse the curse with which I had cursed Marilyn in 1996, telling her to “go to Hell.” On October 5th, the day after Barny called and cursed me, I blessed her. It so happened to be the Feast of Tabernacles. It was **88 days** forward to January 1, 1999, the 24th anniversary of Marilyn and my receiving the Spirit of God. Going **88 days** back took us to **July 10th**. (Most, if not all, of these datings are measured consistently; this one includes both of the days mentioned. Am I taking liberties now? Perhaps.)

Particle - Be What You Are

On October 8th, the Lord strongly impressed upon me that I had to accept and be what I am, and not try to be what I think I should be or try to be something I’m not. So often have I faulted myself for strongly criticizing others, thinking, “This is not the Christian way,” because of my background in the harlot church, which originally taught me its pretentious love and “Christian charisma.”

Of course, “strong criticism” is relative. While some have criticized, others have condemned, destructively fought, and even killed. While diplomats try their best to be “nice,” prophets, as John the Baptist, Jeremiah, Nathan, and Moses - some examples of many - had to tell it like it is, not only risking, but suffering, the wrath of their hearers, especially their own people.

The problem with the harlot church is that it insists one throw out the baby with the bathwater. “If you don’t have anything nice to say, don’t say anything at all,” asserting the truth must be compromised for the sake of peaceful relations. No, that’s altogether the wrong thing to do, and it never works. Evil and error can only be purged by the Word of God, by the Truth - never by affected love, only by that which is unaffected.

I’d always wanted to be loved and accepted, so I’ve done everything to that end. Now, I was having to forsake desirable relations with others to do the right thing. I must love rather than be loved. For my love, they hate me. Is that why they killed the prophets, apostles, and saints?

Particle - In the Twinkle of an Eye

The Lord told me my end would come as the *“flipping of a pancake.”* He said that I wouldn’t be dying. Paul Cohen told me he saw a squirrel bury an acorn but then quickly uncover it. He believed he saw this unusual sight as speaking of what was coming for me. The apostle Paul spoke of the time of the coming of the Lord when we would be changed:

“Behold, I shew you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality” (1 Corinthians 15:51-53 KJV).

Particle - Jonathan's Vision: Work in the World to Come

On October 14th, Marilyn asked if there was work in the world to come. I thought it a strange question and said, "Of course, there is." Jonathan spoke up and said, "Dad, I just had a vision." He saw a man in work clothes, with cowboy hat, moustache, and bushy eyebrows. Over his head, he was swinging a lariat in which was a huge boulder. He did it with ease. There were many boulders all around him of various sizes. He had on a worn beige jacket and the ground was beige.

I immediately interpreted the vision to show that there would be work in the world to come, but that it would be far more productive, easier, and pleasurable. As a kid, I always wanted to be a cowboy, a work I thought was a pleasurable one.

Adam and Eve didn't work by the sweat of the brow, with inefficiency, pain, and sorrow before the day of disobedience, but they *did* work. Their assignment was to dress the Garden and keep it. I see the reconciliation within as a restoration to Edenic conditions - one of peace, tranquility, and pleasure in restful labor. It will be so interesting to see the restoration's completion. (See again the [prophecy](#) for Harvest Haven.)

Particle - Greater Than Moses and Elijah

Perhaps it was mischievous of me, but occasionally I liked to tell people I was greater than Moses or Elijah. Their reactions were interesting; most didn't believe me, and some even mocked, but then I proved my assertion by the Scriptures.

The interesting thing about nominal Christianity, fundamentalist evangelicals included, is that they don't believe what the Bible has to say (most of them barely even *know* what it says):

"Truly I say to you, Among those who have been born of women there has not risen a greater one than John the Baptist. But the least in the Kingdom of Heaven is greater than he" (Matthew 11:11 MKJV).

Why do they not believe the Bible or me? It's because they haven't known God. To such, Jesus said:

"He who is of God hears God's Words. Therefore you do not hear them because you are not of God" (John 8:47 MKJV).

Particle - I Will Make Them Cry

Prophetic words came forth on October 16, 1998:

"I'll be making people cry; they will be moved by my spirit, not knowing what is happening to them, only that it comes from me. In my spirit, I will be reaching theirs, and it will be like soothing, cool salve on a sunburn, balm on an open wound, cool shade from a scorching sun.

But it will be more. It will be the call to be transformed from a hot, dry desert or a cold, barren, forsaken land to a beautiful, enjoyable, fruitful oasis. It will begin with a sensing, a drawing, a realization of what is being held out and of what they lack and have always so lacked. It will proceed to an overwhelming implosion and then a breaking down, as though they've been

hopelessly struggling in defeat all their lives and are now unable to do anything but surrender to me, into my arms.

I will comfort them and lead them to where they have wanted to be (unknown to them) all along. It will be the casting off of death and the dispensation of life. Neither will they be able to turn back easily ever again. It will be instant addiction, a transformation work leaving its permanent mark, an irresistible influence, which would only cause great pain and anguish to turn way from or to betray.

The sorrow and labor will be, in their yielding, turned to joy and rest, a finish of hell and the beginning of peace, Heaven, and God Himself.”

Particle - A Long Visit with Les Mills

Les Mills dropped by unannounced on October 22, 1998, and we visited for about seven hours, covering many topics. He insisted he knows the Lord, speaking of his repentance and baptism with the Holy Spirit. He said that, along with so many other things, I had to be a fool to call him anything but a brother. Les was earnest, sober, and realistic, with faults and weaknesses both carnal and spiritual, like anyone and everyone else. He remained firm on his ground and I on mine.

Contradictory? Yes and no. The Lord will sort it all out. I won't crow if I'm right, by God's grace, and I'll be glad to repent and apologize if wrong. Lord, truly who else can know but You?

Les expressed a fair bit about Barny and Helgrid and was illumined about Barny further when I told him what I had seen and heard. Things were making sense to Les.

Particle - Questions for Barny Knelsen

I wrote these questions of Barny:

If you love me as you say, then:

Why do you call me names and accuse me?

Why do you indulge in speech with others against me, not asking me about the accusations?

Why do you not identify my accusers and get both sides of the story?

How is it you never asked us what we have to say?

How is it you have judged us without allowing us any defense?

You say I'm in danger of hellfire for calling you a fool. Is it any better to call me a warlock?

You tell me to rub shoulders with Les Mills to learn to love. Have you rubbed shoulders with him? Has it done you any good? Is your love his fruit? Is how you treat us what you call "love"?

You threatened not to be so nice if I sent you another letter. What would you do more than you've already done? Has what you've done been nice?

Barny, I think you talk it up to make up for your great lack.

Particle - The First to Enter?

Lois said she received that I would be the first to enter into what God has ordained for the saints... that rest, the fulfillment of the Feast of Tabernacles, the reconciliation of soul and spirit within, total redemption, the Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ (1 Corinthians 15:51-58).

Particle - Jonathan's Prophetic Gift and Wisdom

Aren't we all lawless by nature? On a trip to town and back, I was well over the speed limit, rushing and not paying attention, and passed by a radar surveillance that had me dead to rights. I thought surely I would receive a hefty fine in the mail within a few weeks. In my dismay, Jonathan said: "Dad, I just received a prophecy - *You're okay this time but watch your driving.*" Earlier on, before we left home, he had said, "Don't rush." I obviously ignored his admonition, often being so hyper and intense, rushing.

A proverb says, **"He that hastes with his feet sins" (Proverbs 19:2)**. I ask, "Why am I, must I be, this way?" The only thing that came to me was that with our flesh we served the law of sin but with the mind the Law of God (Romans 7:25). Yet we're without excuse because we are to bring our bodies under, the apostle Paul said, so that we honor God and do what's right.

Marilyn and I discussed the speeding, and the prospect of receiving the ticket troubled me. As I groveled, Jonathan said, "Dad, remember the prophecy," and to avoid such troubling, he said, "All you have to do is not speed, that's all; it's very simple, Dad."

Of course, it is! And I feel ashamed to have to be told such simple things, yet thankful the Lord blessed us with such a son.

If there is one thing I would have asked and did ask of the Lord concerning Jonathan, it was that God would be with him as He is. And it was prophesied that He would be with Jonathan, even from his mother's womb.

Particle - Overwhelmed with Sin

I prayed:

"Father, my sins are over my head - speeding, vulgarity, covetousness, resentment, gluttony, worry, regret, unthankfulness, lust, pride, self-centeredness, anger, impatience, intolerance.... Is there no respite, no end, no final, conclusive victory or absolute triumph? If there is, how and when, Lord?"

The Christian writer, Preston Eby, in *Kingdom of God* Part 17, wrote, "No Christian alive has ever experienced this," speaking of complete victory on earth, resurrection, manifestation as a son of God, victorious not over the fleshly lusts and carnal weaknesses only, but over death itself. Oh, how I longed for this! Oh, if I could only have it now!

Particle - Dream: Others Joining Us

For the night of October 27th, I see recorded in my journal a dream I had, which I didn't believe was of God at the time, yet the description makes me wonder:

"People coming, all ages and backgrounds and occupations, coming to bless and be with us. The dream didn't seem to be of the Lord. A young man had come, pretending to be familiar with us, making himself comfortable, trying me in particular, and noting my receptivity and honesty with him, committed himself to me and after him came many more, joining themselves to us in fellowship."

Particle - I Abhor Myself

I wrote in my journal:

I have many regrets about myself, my past, the way I've been - I deserve the worst - so disgusted with myself I don't even want mercy. What can I do concerning all those I've hurt, maimed, permanently impacted? I must be changed, first of all; nothing else can be before that. Then I hope for the opportunity to heal, deliver, help in meaningful and permanent ways, especially those I've hurt, if possible.

Lord, if You will have mercy, let it be not for me, but through me to those who need it everywhere. Grant me to correct not only the wrongs I've done but the wrongs of countless many others. That's all I ask. And then, Lord, You can do what You want with me; consign me to the flames I so deserve, if You will.

We are nearing our birth - the labor pains come in greater intensity and frequency. I can feel something happening. We are coming forth.

Particle - Deliverance Determined from the Doors of the Deep

I have called the formal, nominal churches the "gates of Hell" of which Jesus spoke. The word "Hell" as used here is "Hades," meaning "unseen" or "place of the dead." That is exactly what the world's churches are - places of the dead. An interesting thing is that the true Church would prevail against them; Jesus "led captivity captive," having descended into Hades and delivering the spirits out of it.

This same action continues; as with the Head, so with the rest of His Body. The individual members of His Body lay down their lives and ultimately deliver souls out of Hades, out of the gates of Hell, out of the church systems, out of the grip of the harlot and Satan and darkness.

Particle - Limbo and Purgatory

Protestants don't believe in Limbo and Purgatory as real places in the next world or in any way for that matter, but I say that these places and, more properly, these states of being, exist here in this life. Are we not held for a time or times, not because of sin, but by the wisdom of God, for the purposes He's working out (Limbo)? Aren't we baptized in the Spirit of Him Who is a consuming refiner's fire and thereby cleansed, chastened, and purged, (Purgatory) before we enter into Heaven to have that peace and joy of pure fellowship with God?

Carnal minds have taken these terms and brought them into disrepute and incredibleness, whereas the spiritual mind can receive these truths. Of course, only the Spirit would have made them known originally.

Particle - Love

Love? What man loves? If Solomon “loved many wives,” what of it? Did he have a special love for one in particular? It only says he had 300 wives and 700 concubines. If Israelites loved Gentile women, what of it? They weren’t supposed to. Does emotional, passionate, romantic love count before God?

Jacob “loved” Rachel and the Lord took her early. Neither was she buried with the patriarchs. Leah, whom Jacob did not “love,” the Lord honored; He blessed her in the fruit of her womb, and she was buried with Abraham, Sarah, Isaac, Rebekah, and Jacob.

Samson loved a woman, not because God was blessing their marriage, but because He was seeking occasion against the Philistines.

I’ve loved several women, yet there was nothing in the Lord to it, not even when, as a believer, I loved one and she me, or so I thought.

It’s a curious thing to me that wherever it’s mentioned that men loved women, it was always a relationship not favored or honored by God, as men would expect. These “loves” were apparently against God, His will, and His Law.

David’s love for Bathsheba is an example of illegitimate passion. Shechem of Canaan loved Dinah, Jacob’s daughter, which was unacceptable to Jacob and his family. David’s son, Amnon, loved his half-sister, Tamar, and raped her, after which, he hated her. The love I had for other women I know to be the same kind of love these all had, and it was without true substance, as with these mentioned.

The love I had for Marilyn wasn’t for her body or her looks, money, popularity, humor, intelligence, or power. Was it for personality? Perhaps, at least in part. Was it for common interests? Perhaps. But I think it was simply that we were bound together not in our own loves, but in God’s. Before we married, I missed her when she was away, I felt free and good to confide in her, and our destiny in interests appeared to be one. It was God’s love reigning, in spite of our faults.

I also note that where marriages were blessed and honored of God, as with Adam and Eve, Abraham and Sarah, Joseph and his wife, Moses and his, love wasn’t mentioned, only with Isaac and Rebekah. Even there, Rebekah practised deception on her husband. Was that love?

My conclusion? The Lord enlightened us from the very beginning concerning love, Heavenly and earthly, spiritual and carnal, willful and emotional. Our flesh desires a fulfillment that it ultimately isn’t destined to have with God. One choosing the earthly, sensual, Hollywood brand of love is as a man choosing a prostitute over a wife or finding fulfillment in something or someone other than the Highest.

Particle - It Costs Them Even Now

We believers take for granted the day-to-day benefits we have in this world and the price paid on our behalf by those saints passed on to the next world. We imagine them with magical powers,

protecting us with ease, not realizing there is thought, planning, wisdom, understanding, and knowledge applied, strength and courage marshaled, and effort exerted, perhaps with some risks, both known and unknown to them - all these things on a constant basis.

As well, they harbor hopes, bear anxieties, and are tried and tested as are we in this life, only on another plane of their development. No, we've no right to assume there's no price for saints gone on to pay even now as they minister to us.

Particle - Our Provision

God creates and recreates - as in the twofold feeding of the multitudes, provision of money to pay the taxes, filling of the fish nets, raising up from the dead, multiplying of the oil and meal for the widow and her son, and Lazarus' restoration to life.

We needn't live in the regret of losses, failures, and mistakes. He replenishes what is lost even if through foolishness, as with the prodigal son. Being of the race of Adam, haven't we all done foolishly, lost, and suffered? But subjection to vanity is what it's all about. The things of this world don't perish because we set our hearts on them. Rather, we ought not to set our hearts on them because, by very nature and purpose, they perish. And if our hearts are set on that which perishes, where are we but set on course for inevitable loss, sorrow, anguish, and disappointment?

Particle - Miyuki Request and Reply

On November 9th, Mark's Japanese friend, [Miyuki Sasaki](#), wrote me (while in Japan, Mark had spent much time talking to her about the Lord). She said she was treating the things of the Lord lightly, not keeping contact with us, taking Mark for granted, and treating me as some sort of psychiatric or "lifestyle counseling" service. She said she loved the things of this world, like work, home, family, and reputation, and that, consequently, she doubted us, the Lord (or our "version" of the Lord).

She spoke of a struggle to pray and to believe, saying she seemed to be building a wall around herself and wanted to be free of it. She said she didn't know what to do, complaining she had no time with her daughter, Ruth, every day wanting to quit work and be with her. She said she realized that a husband wasn't the answer to security and freedom.

She closed the letter with: "Victor, what should I do? I want to be rid of myself as I am right now. I want to be able to just see God and not be caught up with everything else. Can you help me? I really don't know what to do or where to go."

I didn't take her request lightly. I prayed and asked the Lord what I should say. I told her she was to quit her job as soon as possible and put her trust entirely in the Lord to guide and provide for her, her daughter Ruth, and her mother and aunt, who were living under her roof. Here is the letter I wrote her:

Miyuki, you ask what you should be doing specifically. You are to give the shortest notice allowable to your employer(s) and leave your job completely.

It's a shame that Ruth was kept by God to be a blessing not only to you here and now but to others down the road, yet she has no mother.

You look for a husband, a weak, earthly husband, who provides skimpily and so imperfectly. You are to look to the Lord Himself as your Husband and He will protect and provide for you as no earthly husband could ever imagine.

Obey and you will have peace, joy, and fulfillment. Trust Him; marry Him; obey Him. No good thing will He withhold from you.

I tell you this in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, by Him, of Him. Don't be afraid. Do it and you will see God. - Victor

For years, we had wondered what was required of Miyuki in order to enter life. Now we knew. Would she have the faith to obey? As usual, the order was a tall one, just enough to kill. After all, obedience through faith means to take up the torture stake, even as Abraham, our father in the faith, was tried with his son, Isaac.

Particle - Peculiar Phone Calls

On the evening of November 8th, Jason Benson called, saying he was following through with a guilty plea. I had told him that if he admitted his guilt and accepted the sentence, which we believed would be seven years, the Lord would take care of him.

On November 9th, surprisingly, Gene Knorr called, speaking of Elwin Roach, a Christian writer, whom he said taught as I did (or I as he), saying that the manifestation of the sons of God would appear quite normal, nothing unusual in certain respects, though the very unusual would nevertheless happen.

Then Chris Hafichuk called confessing, crying and apologizing, but for his own sake, which I told him. When Chris said, "I'll do whatever you say or require of me," Marilyn said, "If you repent, you'll know what to do" (she received not to believe him).

With these two unusual phone calls on this day, I said, "If I get two or three more calls this evening, I'll know that something big is happening tomorrow."

Then Jason called again, for apparently no particular reason. I had things to say to him, which he received.

Then Les Mills called and we talked in agreement, which was somewhat unusual.

I didn't recall ever having so many phone calls in one day in a long time. I said, "There's two, and if there's one more, that's it... I'll know tomorrow is it." Within minutes the phone rang. It was Miyuki calling from Japan in response to my letter to her plea for help.

I concluded, "Lord, one way or another, You come for me and I go to be with You. Lord, comfort my son. Do what You must do for all."

Particle - The Awaited Time

November 10th was finally here - Day 777 of the [prophecy](#). I had things to say to some people. I wrote in my journal words to be passed on if I was taken.

I encouraged Les Mills to obey God and not compromise in what he received to say to anyone.

I wrote to my mother, saying, “The Lord doesn’t condemn you and neither do I. Repent.”

I wrote to Lynn Gregson, clarifying where I stood in relation to Bob and her and her suffering, which she laid at my feet.

I wrote to Casey Overbeek, telling him he was mocking God in all his ways, though full of what he thought were Christian works, calling on him to repent and assuring him that while I was telling him things he didn’t wish to hear, I wasn’t condemning him.

Particle - What Is Condemnation

Condemnation? What is it? It is damning someone, not desiring their good, relegating them to total disposal. Telling them their sins so that they might repent and be saved, healed, cleansed, and made at peace with God is the very opposite, though willful sinners call it condemnation. “You’re putting me under condemnation!” they spitefully cry.

“No, I’m only telling you that’s where you already are and don’t know it.”

As Jesus said:

“He who believes on Him is not condemned, but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the Name of the Only-begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than the Light, because their deeds were evil” (John 3:18-19 MKJV).

As Harry Truman said, “I never did give anybody hell. I just told the truth and they thought it was hell.”

Particle - Speak Boldly, as with Nothing to Lose

In writing the letters to Les Mills, Casey Overbeek, my mother, and Lynn Gregson, I spoke more freely, perhaps because I wasn’t going to be the one delivering the messages. I recalled that during the 10-day fast when I expected the Lord to take me and I wrote messages to various people, I was bolder, knowing or believing I wouldn’t be there to face the possible consequences. So in this last time, expecting the Lord to take me, I was bold in what I had to say, particularly with my next-door neighbors.

I see a principle here - one should speak always as though he was about to go and be with the Lord, as having nothing to lose in this world. Of course, he would also be cognizant of the fact he was about to face God and therefore would want to say what was needed, the way it needed to be said. In such a mindset, there’s rest and victory and, perhaps, power? This consequent boldness wouldn’t be a matter of degrees but more a matter of disposition.

Jonathan persuaded me to pull out the guitar and sing him my songs. I had to choke back the tears as I sang.

But there was another great battle with Marilyn.

Particle - Never Gonna Die

First thing on the morning of November 11th, Jonathan said, “Dad, nothing happened yesterday. That’s something, eh, Dad?”

“Sometimes God does things or things happen without being seen,” I replied.

He then said, “Dad, I just had a feeling (or felt a prophecy).... It’s a short one....”

“Go ahead, son.”

“You’re going to be around forever!” he replied, mildly wondering.

Particle - A Day to Be Remembered

November 11, 1998 was a day we would remember with wonder, not because of “Remembrance Day,” but because of what we’d see the Lord do in the not-too-distant future, as you’ll see.

Marilyn asked, “What do you want from me?” My answer: A wife that loves me and is one with me - specifically *her*, not another. This is not to say that such was my *primary* desire, but only wherein she and I are concerned, if we were to go on. I told her that I didn’t want our relationship restored anymore, that any feelings I had for her were gone, that I wanted no more of the relationship we had these past years, but I wanted a new marital relationship with her.

On this **November 11th** day, I said to Marilyn, “I’m finished with your September 24, 1996 prophecy.” Somehow the day before was a closure, which I inadvertently verbalized on the 11th. November 10th was Day 777, a number of completeness made in Heaven, a Day of Rest. It was on the 10th day of the 11th month that Noah opened the window of the ark to a new world. It was **40 months** before that day that we saw the farm, and **40 months** before that we purchased it.

How does one arrange numbers and events such as these, or walk away from them without consideration? I doubt very much an explosion of gases could do it, no matter how long ago that took place.

Who says there is no God?

Particle - God Has Our Numbers

In the course of keeping a journal and remembering some dates, I discovered some marvelous timings in our lives that couldn’t be ignored. It’s not that I need these to prove the existence of the Supreme Intelligence of the Universe, but one can’t help but marvel at the precise timing of apparently unrelated dates, people, and events (personal, Biblical, and otherwise) working together in perfect harmony. I found many of these without deliberate searching or pondering. I have no doubt there’s a calculated mathematical pattern including every event and atom in our lives and all of creation.

Herein I record some instances of significant numbers of days connecting significant events, which God has given me to recognize. I remind the reader that the dates **July 10th** and **November 10th** have been very important for us, not because we chose them to be so, but because it was abundantly evident that God in His will deemed them significant for us, governing our lives by and in those dates long before we realized it.

I found the number 3 common and representing God's will, having a Heavenly significance. I didn't record many such instances; however, I did record a marvelous timing of a multiple of 3. It was 300 days after Marilyn's [prophecy](#) on September 24, 1996, to the [day](#) I began the major 25-day fast on July 21, 1997.

Tens, hundreds, and thousands (adding zeroes to numbers) signify increasing significance. From August 2, 1998, the day I left Paul at [Glacier Park](#), the last time I saw him before God would unite us in spirit to be a witness unto Him, to November 10, 1998 was 100 days.

From September 24, 1996, the day of Marilyn's prophecy, one day after the first day of the Feast of Tabernacles, to February 6, 1998, the last day of my [second fast](#), is 500 days.

Marilyn's prophecy came 360 days (a Hebrew year) from taking [possession](#) of the farm - October 1, 1995 to September 24, 1996.

The number 6 represents labor. "Six days shall you work...." The number of the beast is 666, representing the strength and religious activity of man and of the flesh, which is unrighteous and which destroys:

"Concerning the works of men, by the Word of Your lips I have kept me from the paths of the destroyer" (Psalm 17:4).

It was on July 22, 1998, 666 days after Marilyn's [prophecy](#), when Sean came to our home from the farm to recuperate. That's when I told him that I was not going to die and that it was wrong for Marilyn and him to carry on as they did. (It was the only day in that long stretch of time that he did visit me.) He chose not to believe me. I thought the number of the day, 666, referred to him, while Marilyn and Sean, with Marilyn's influence, I believe, concluded that it referred to me.

Yet, according to Marilyn's prophecy, I was to have a ministry like unto Moses!

The number 7 represents a totality or completeness. From September 24, 1996, the day of Marilyn's prophecy to November 10, 1998 is 777 days. On the 11th of November, without realizing what I was doing in terms of timing (as with all these events), I decided I was finished with Marilyn's prophecy, in terms of her interpretation and waiting to physically die. There was a completeness God had accomplished in me. In completeness, there is rest.

Going back 88 days from Day 666, then 88 days more takes us to 490 days (7 X 70) after Marilyn's prophecy, to January 27, 1997, the day I began my second fast.

I found several instances of the number 40, which represents a period of trial and testing to completion, a generation or the end of flesh.

I'm convinced every detail in the universe and in our lives is timed perfectly.

From February 17, the day the 40-day rain of the Noahic flood was complete (by the Gentile calendar) to March 29 (a [prophesied](#) day for us) is 40 days.

From the last day of my [first fast](#) (August 14, 1997) to the '97 anniversary of Marilyn's prophecy of September 24, 1996 is 40 days.

From Yom Kippur, September 30, 1998 to November 10, 1998 (Day 777) is 40 days.

November 10th is the day Noah opened the window of the ark (10th day of the 11th month - 40 days after the 1st day of the 10th month, counting Hebrew years of 360 days). That day must have been quite a shocker to Noah and his family.

From December 28, 1997, the day I fully [resigned myself](#) to Marilyn's prophecy to February 6, 1998, the last day of the [second fast](#), is **40 days**.

The number 8 represents a new creation. I found many 88's.

If one were to take the Name "Jesus" and give the Greek letters a numerical equivalent, the sum total would be **888**. He is our Resurrection and Life, the "New Thing" God is doing, the Firstborn of all creation from the dead, Who came through death, conquering it for us. I found the number 88 in days to be a timing between many of the significant events in our lives:

From the first day of the [first major fast](#), July 21, 1997 to the Feast of Tabernacles, October 16, 1997 is **88 days**.

From the last day of the [second fast](#), February 6, 1998 to the [Gregson visit](#) of May 5, 1998 is **88 days**.

From the [Gregson visit](#) of May 5 to the [meeting with Paul](#) on August 1 is **88 days**.

From the last day of the [first fast](#), August 14, 1997 to November 10, 1997, the day Bob Gregson related his [dream](#) to me of the Lord's coming, is **88 days**.

From November 10, 1997 to the last day of the second fast, February 6, 1998, is **88 days**.

From the first day of my [second fast](#), January 27, 1998, to July 22, 1998 (Day 666 after Marilyn's prophecy), the day [Sean came](#) to visit, was **176 days (2 X 88)**.

Counting back **88 days** from July 22, 1998 (Day 666), I find the record of recognizing Paul's enmity, Archie's note of enmity, Trevor's bitterness revealed, Cindy Dempsey's enmity manifest, and [Marquise Harris](#) kicking me out of her house.

From the end of the farm fast of December 30, 1997 to March 28, 1998, the [prophesied](#) day, the day Jonathan had a [vision](#) of the earth exploding, is **88 days**.

From October 3, 1997, the day I wrote the "Man of Sin" [letter](#) to the farm, to the end of the farm fast, December 30, 1997, is **88 days**.

From my last full day at the farm, July 7, 1997, to the delivery of the "Man of Sin" [letter](#) to the farm on October 3 is **88 days**.

From the day I had wisdom from the Lord to [stop Kerri](#) in her tracks of attack on January 14, 1998 to April 12, 1998, the [visit of the enemy](#), is **88 days**.

It is **88 days** from April 12, the day the seven people came to [visit us](#), the day I had the vision of the boulders, to July 10, 1998.

Five is the number of blessing and life. The number 50 is significant. It is a multiple of 5 and 10.

It was on the **5th day** that much of life on earth was created.

Keeping the **5th commandment**, honoring those from whom we have received life, we are promised long life.

We have **5 senses, 5 fingers on each hand, and 5 toes** on each foot, all representing life and blessing.

Noah was the **10th from Adam** (2 x 5) and preserved life on the ark by twos and sevens, while all else was destroyed, the earth undergoing baptism of water.

Upon the birth of the **5th man** on earth, Enos, men began to call upon the Name of Him Who is Blessing and Life.

It was on the **50th day** after the resurrection that people received the Spirit of Life at Pentecost, the anniversary day of the giving of the Law of Life at Mount Sinai, the Law composed of 10 commandments (2 x 5).

On March 28th and 29th, we experienced subtle but significant workings of God in our lives, particularly mine, as others testified.

From March 28, 1998, **50 days** after February 6th, the last day of the [second fast](#), to Jonathan's [boulder vision](#) of June 24th is **88 days**.

As if these were not enough, I recorded all these **88s** on August 13, 1998 - **88 days** to November 10th!

This, on the **688th** day from Marilyn's prophecy. Psychological? How about all those other events and dates? Is my mind in control of everybody and everything, including Biblical records? Think it if you wish, but I don't think so.

Who says there is no God?

Particle - A Test for Chris

I called Chris Hafichuk to try his words and see if he would do something about a Jacobs electronic unit that he had pressed me to purchase until I yielded and he installed in my car. It wasn't working. He said he would do anything we asked. He wouldn't do anything about this. Here was his opportunity and he refused. Marilyn was right - he was not to be believed.

Particle - A Word Fulfilled: "Turned Upside Down"

On November 13, 1998 I awoke with a revelation. I suddenly realized what the Lord had meant 22 years ago that day when He [spoke](#) by Don Morrison, saying, *"I am going to turn you upside down."* Soul was ruling spirit, but now spirit would be ruling over and through the soul. It seemed that all the words by the prophet Don Morrison spoken in November 1976 had come to pass.

Particle - Gestation Periods

From February 6, 1998, the day I was done my 10-day fast and the Lord appeared to me, to **November 10th** when the Lord gave me victory, was about **9 months**. During that time, the synagogue of Satan was there to devour me as soon as I came forth, a principle at work with many people, in many places, at many times, and in many ways. (Noah had been sealed in the ark from the 10th day of the second month to the 10th day of the 11th month, a perfect 9 months.)

From the time I [consecrated](#) my life on **July 10, 1997** to the day when the [Ogdens came](#) on April 11, 1998 was **9 months**. The Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, and Erin Schipper came on April 12th and met with us for several hours, and there was conflict.

Who says there is no God?

Particle - A Major Closing Encounter with the Mills

On November 18th, Les and Penny Mills came to visit for about six hours. I later wrote:

I feel this event has been very significant but I don't know why. I think there has been a head-on collision wherein they took the hit severely while we came out unscathed (this reminds me of the [vision](#) of the star hitting the earth). In the clash, we imparted our substance into them while remaining impervious to anything from them.

It was a clash of light and darkness, and whenever those two meet, darkness simply disappears. *"Great and terrible will be that Day (the Day of the Lord), great for the righteous and terrible for the wicked."* This happened in this visit.

This also reminds me of the [vision](#) of those men coming at me shortly after I landed on new territory at dawn, wherein I put one of them away instantly with great ease.

Les and Penny were confronted with reality; it was reality against unreality. They walked away permanently, irrevocably impacted, the influence working to a perfect conclusion.

I came to realize how much at enmity the Knorrs and the Mills were with us. Satan is deceptive, seductive, an entity of and in darkness, a hater of God's Law and of Him, lawless, proud, obstinate, stubborn, pleasure-seeking, presumptuous, ever learning yet never coming to knowledge of the truth, and preferring revelation to obedience (they despised obedience, calling it bondage). They came with carnal love, satanic love, compromising and judging after the letter. So much more could have been said. What was I to do? Nothing! There was nothing I could or needed to do.

Particle - The Trump Card of Babylon

The Mills and the Knorrs didn't believe in eternal damnation, and they believed that all would eventually be saved, which is true. Les believed Babylon's "trump card" was the doctrine of eternal damnation, whereby control by fear is imposed upon souls. Doctrinally, I think he may be right. Mystery's greatest strength, however, is false love, whereby souls are attracted and seduced. She takes the things of God, Who is Love and Truth, and perversely uses them for her own gain, destroying her victims in the process (Proverbs 2:16-19; 5:3-23; 6:24-26).

Far more souls have been attracted by honey and oil than by vinegar and gall. This false love, this counterfeit compassion, is so overpowering that even the strong have difficulty resisting. Mystery is

beautiful, powerful, admired, praised, worshipped, desired, seductive, merciless in her mercy, hateful in her love, utterly disguised in her reality, so unreal is she.

Truly, to escape her, one must die. One must forsake all that is pleasurable and reject the praise and acceptance of men. One must be willing to be counted an enemy and fool and be prepared for the sure status of an outcast. There is no choice. One can only “buy and sell” among religious men by possessing the mark of the beast. Mystery is the one who does the marking; refuse the mark and she refuses you all opportunity of interaction and interrelation with all those who have received the mark.

The beast, whose is the mark, is the one with 7 heads and 10 horns, full of names of blasphemy, and it is this beast that the harlot rides (Revelation 13:1; 17:3). She’s the one who draws men by her subjects, the sons of the beast which has 2 horns like a lamb and which speaks as a dragon - eloquently, persuasively, compassionately, sincerely, and wisely. Mystery’s subjects brand with the mark all that fall prey by willingly receiving it in their ways and thoughts. Only those who “love not their lives unto death” can escape, and few are those at any time.

Particle - Satan’s Works

What does Satan do? He meets needs indiscriminately; preserves flesh and blood relations; praises good works; mingles with both saints and sinners; worships the letter of the Law; worships worship; loves knowledge and revelation; seeks after social pleasures; differentiates between, and divides, secular and religious; specializes in passion and sentimentality, tugging at the heart strings; accuses, mocks, and vilifies the righteous and innocent; flatters both righteous and wicked; reasons; pampers and protects the flesh; despises the Substance and Spirit of the Law of God and obedience to Him; denies the sovereignty of God and His full control over all that exists. Most of all, Satan despises the cross of death in identification with Christ; he cannot and will not go there.

Particle - The Message of the Hour

The Lord made it known to me that this is the “message of the hour”: **He is in full control; He is all in all; the Kingdom of Heaven reigns supreme.** God is, and nothing is without God.

Particle - Y2K

There was great speculation and publicity about the possible ramifications of the coming “Y2K”, when the clock would turn to the year 2000. I received that it would not be anywhere as serious as Yourdon and others theorized and speculated.

The hype of this event didn’t affect me like the “[Jupiter Effect](#)” of 1984. We did nothing to respond to, or prepare for, the possibility of the fulfilment of either of these false predictions.

Particle - God Comes by Flesh and Blood

God came by a man, Jesus Christ, and comes by men. He requires of those to whom He sends His man that they say, **“Blessed is he that comes in the Name of the Lord” (Matthew 23:39).**

There are many who come using the Lord’s Name, yet come in their own names, and there are precious few who come in the Lord’s Name, in His Spirit, sent by Him. When Jesus came in the flesh, He made this astounding statement: **“All that ever came before Me are thieves and robbers, but the sheep did not hear them” (John 10:8).**

How does one tell a man of God and a “man of man,” a thief and robber? If that one is a sheep, he will know who is who. As Jesus said of the true shepherd and his sheep: **“And when he puts forth his own sheep, he goes before them, and the sheep follow him. For they know his voice. And they will not follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers” (John 10:4-5 MKJV).**

Particle - Miyuki's Reply

On November 22nd, Miyuki replied to the Word of the Lord I spoke to her [days before](#). She wrote:

Dear Victor

Thank you for the message from the Lord. Is “leave your job completely” meaning that He wants me to quit my job right now? I can't see anyway how my family and I to live if I leave my job. Where we can live, how we can get some money. Do I have to sell this house? I don't know what I do. But, you told me “I tell you this in the Lord Jesus Christ, by Him, of Him.” And also said to me, “Don't be afraid. Do it and you see God.” There's nothing to ask you about the message anymore. I know what I should do.

“I will lift up my eyes to the mountains; from whence shall my help come? My help comes from the Lord, Who made heaven and earth” (Psalm 121:1).

“Trust in Him at all times; pour out your heart before Him; God is a refuge for us” (Psalm 62:8).

“He who trusts in the Lord, lovingkindness shall surround him. Be glad in the Lord and rejoice you righteous ones” (Psalms 32:10-11).

Pray for me and all of us, Ruth, my mother, my aunt, my family. Please pray for me that I can believe in Him and obey Him completely. Please.

Particle - Confronting Sean

Lois received that there was sin, and Marilyn was wondering why sales were dead. I confronted Sean on preserving himself, something he was accustomed to doing consistently and artfully.

The next morning, Sean called confessing that he had been fantasizing about undressing Marilyn and having sex with her, imagining the wedding night and how he would like to have it in bed with her. They had both been fantasizing about each other.

We had hid our heads in the sand. The facts were:

One, Marilyn made her decision on choice of husband and did so publicly.

Two, she declared she loved Sean.

Three, he declared he loved her.

These declarations of love were marital in nature, not as in “love of the brethren.”

Four, this was a present, not a future, situation.

As God is a jealous God and will not tolerate more than one husband or God for His people besides Himself, so the husband and wife are to be an expression of His ways. Whereas several men of God had more than one wife, and God can have many peoples, never was it known in righteousness that a woman had more than one husband.

Therefore Marilyn had chosen. While she called me “dear,” there was one dearer. We couldn’t continue as husband and wife in peace, ignoring the facts.

Marilyn’s heart was given over to another. If this was of God, then she should have been receiving covering from him. But it was strange that she, as a wife, could say to Sean, her chosen husband, “I can do what I want with you - you don’t have any choice,” presuming to have authority over him, both in business and spiritual matters... and obviously, in marriage.

And why was I compelled to live while this happened? Why was I subjected to their affections toward, and fantasies of, each other?

Particle - The Widowing

Marilyn had heard on the 5th of November, “By this time next week, you’ll be a widow.” What kind of widow? What was she hearing? How many such things had she heard by now? What did she want to hear?

Yes, something happened to me on November 10th, and I certainly wasn’t hers as I had been. I couldn’t deny she was in a way a widow.

On November 27th, she and I prayed that God’s will be done. I asked the Lord to bring Marilyn into the light and freedom. Marilyn told me that at times she felt as though she didn’t care what the will of the Lord was, that she just wanted Sean.

Particle - Revisiting Jim Flynn

Over the past 23 years since I had last seen [Jim Flynn](#), who had great prophecies over me, it hadn’t occurred to me to call him. I was ashamed of not having called him because I knew that had I had spiritual dealings with people as Jim did with me, I would have much appreciated their touching base with me long before this. I called now.

Jim spoke of whole cities in Columbia coming to the Lord, with drug lords dying or being taken out of the way. He spoke highly of the “Toronto Blessing” and how 55,000 ministers and priests from around the world had come there and were baptized in the Holy Spirit with multitudes healed. He spoke of having a ministry and praying for many and witnessing to them on a one-to-one basis. Many, he said, had been converted, baptized in the Spirit, and healed - some instantly.

He told me Carroll and Yvonne Vance were doing fine near Penticton. They had one son who was “still blind” and another who quit chiropractic practice at age 42 because of some disease. Jim said his own son was a backslider.

He informed me that [Vic Graham](#), the Calgary preacher who prominently preached the reconciliation of all things, died two years before; his wife lived in a seniors’ home. Jim complained that at Vic’s church, they only gathered knowledge but didn’t reach out or have love,

and those who gathered there found it perfectly easy to live in adultery and fornication. (Though Vic once preached a message part of which had ministered to me, I'd had many doctrinal conflicts with him).

Jim had asked Vic to come and cast out a devil from his wife. Vic declined, saying they didn't do anything like that. I believe I know why. He was possessed himself (I recall his incessant visions and prophecies, of which I was skeptical more than once). Satan doesn't fight against Satan.

Jim believed in the reconciliation of all things, yet went to a church where his pastor preached eternal torment for the majority of mankind. He says he talked to many ministers, prayed for them, and also ministered at a Catholic mission. To me his stance seemed very ecumenical, watered down, compromised. Jim would pray for anyone, anytime it seemed, and mingle with all.

He also said that people will listen if you love them and set aside doctrine and differences. He said there was an enormous hunger out there for the Lord and the things of God. I said I didn't see it, but what I did see was so very much counterfeit. I told him I was skeptical of much, if not all, of what he was telling me.

I reminded Jim of a portion of the prophecy he delivered to me in 1975, saying I would see more than other men. "That's beautiful, isn't it?" he responded. He missed the point, however. If he were to believe I had the fulfillment and the reality of his prophecy, and I saw the very opposite of what he was seeing and saying, he would have to admit he was in error.

He suggested that I get in touch with Frank Harms of Coaldale Christian Fellowship, saying Frank had a great anointing of God. As I understood it, Frank was the man to whom Chris Hafichuk went for counseling after leaving us. I had little doubt my name would be mud with Frank for at least two reasons, not the least of which was that Frank was all caught up in the system of religion, serving Mystery, and second, hearing Chris's twisted version of events. However, the latter is assumption; I don't really know what happened between them.

Jim asked how Marilyn was doing, and I told him we had been going through some difficult times for the past five years or so.

Jim said the key to winning souls was love. Is that so? Jesus loved the rich young ruler, who nevertheless turned away. Many disciples turned away (John 6:66), even after being with Jesus and partaking of His anointing. Had He not loved them? As well, there were the multitudes He fed and healed who weren't coming to Him for salvation, but rather for the food that perishes. On the other hand, there was Jonah, who preached wrath with a bad attitude, and all of Nineveh, every single soul, repented towards God. No, it's not a matter of love, though God saves and heals because He loves.

All Jim did seemed so commendable, but was he right?

He informed us that his wife lived in fear of the public. If his love wins, why was his wife so troubled?

Particle - Dream: Archie in Terrible State

I had a horrible dream of Archie one night - just horrible. He was very bitter and antagonistic, yet powerless to do anything against me. He was a pitiful, lost, tormented soul. I felt responsible; I

would have liked to help him, but I knew it was only the Lord Who could do so. “Lord,” I prayed, “save him and his house.”

Particle - The Feast of Tabernacles Completed?

Les Mills called, repeating something Preston Eby was heard to have said very recently. He said the Lord was finished doing what He was to be doing in this day concerning the Feast of Tabernacles (which signifies His Coming) and the manifestation of the sons of God. There was only the unveiling (manifesting) left, and we were to not be discouraged at the absence of outward evidence.

Gene Knorr heard these things and said the expectation was that it was only a matter of months before this prophecy would be fulfilled. I wondered if God had not given something to Eby, whether applying on a universal scale or referring to what God was presently doing with us in our personal situation. I was moved by Eby’s words and pondered them, even as Mary pondered the shepherds’ report of the angelic visit declaring she bore “the Savior, Christ the Lord.”

Particle - Crisis at the Farm

On November 28, 1998, Lois, Marilyn, and Sean called me at home from the farm. Sean confessed serious perversities in thought. He felt to confess them to me, and Marilyn asked that I pray for him and take authority over devils. I prayed, calling on Heaven to cleanse them all. I also had some observations I didn’t record and didn’t think to be of any ultimate consequence. I simply requested and declared that all should be quickly cleaned up, one way or another.

The next day I went to the farm with words to speak to Sean (I don’t recall what they were and didn’t record them). While there, Lois pressed me to come with her to see her son Jason in Red Deer on the 30th. He was to be sentenced for his patricide crime.

Particle - Jason Takes His Medicine

On November 30, 1998, Lois and I drove to Red Deer. Jason pleaded guilty to second-degree murder, as we counseled him, and was sentenced to seven years in a penitentiary. He would be an inmate at Drumheller, Alberta.

His lawyer, Lorne Goddard, seemed not too pleased with us. He was hoping to apply to the court for psychiatric allowance for Jason. I don’t believe Mr. Goddard was as interested in justice or in Jason’s welfare as he was in his own financial and career advancement. In a matter of months, we would hear more of Mr. Goddard and his moral stance.

We later went to the Remand Center and saw Jason for a half hour. We shared things with him we felt he needed to hear to prepare him for prison. I told him that as long as he kept his nose clean, the Lord would keep him.

“Penitentiary”? It may seem that the system is a mockery of the meaning of the word. Penitentiaries and correctional institutions seem anything but what their titles imply, yet something happens. While man’s justice is certainly not God’s way, God nevertheless governs all, and His purposes in these institutions are fulfilled in perfect justice, beyond what men can do, devise, or even imagine.

Particle - Was I the Culprit?

Was I guilty of allowing the relationship to develop between Sean and Marilyn? Three times the Lord had asked me to *“let it happen.”*

As I write years later, I see a parallel of our experience to the parable of the wheat and tares, in which the master said to let the tares grow together with the wheat until harvest. The part of Marilyn’s 1996 prophecy, the part she withheld from me, saying she would marry Sean, was referred to in a later prophecy as a tare. God had said to me, *“Let it happen.”* In other words, “Let the tares grow with the wheat, the lies with the truth.”

Particle - A Troubled Sean

On December 1st at 3:00 AM, Sean called us to say he had thoughts of satanic sacrificial rites - blood and feathers, sacrificing Marilyn, etc. What was my reaction? I immediately felt guilty of interfering with Marilyn and Sean’s chosen course. I confessed that I was the culprit and asked the Lord to help me to obey Him and *“let it happen.”* I had fought it all the way. There was no other way but for me to allow Marilyn and Sean to fully feel and express what they would and how they were for each other and to marry - in my presence.

Particle - Hasty, Foolish Words

I recall [once saying](#) to Sean, speaking of having the responsibility to lead those under me, “You want to take my place? I’ll trade you places if you want.” I was in turmoil about all the troubles with everyone and everything, while Sean was seeking to possess all and have the preeminence.

He was bold and quick to agree to it. He said, “Yes, I want to run everything.”

I recall the words of the Lord, **“But I say to you that every idle word, whatever men may speak, they shall give account of it in the day of judgment” (Matthew 12:36 MKJV).**

I deserved all that I was getting now. Concerning husbands and wives, I divided Paul and Alison. I had taken many wives from men, successfully or not - even those whom I called to forsake their wives but didn’t, like Bob Gregson, Archie, and several others. That I failed or succeeded didn’t matter; the thought or intent was there, which is more than enough for God because He looks at the heart. We reap what we sow.

Was all this not happening because of my doings? I could only say, “Let’s get this terrible harvest over; let this judgment be deemed a good and needful thing - at least as an enema or purgative, and then let’s go on to sowing new and good things. Shall I refuse what I deserve? Shall I not ‘take my medicine’ when I advise others, like Jason, to take it? He isn’t being condemned, only corrected, and so with me. God’s judgments are not destructive, but redemptive.”

Particle - The Scapegoat

Once a year, on the tenth day of the seventh month, the Day of Atonement, the most solemn day of the year, Israel would pray their sins over a goat and send it “unto a land uninhabited by the hand of a fit man.” This goat is known as the “goat of departure” (Hebrew - Azazel). It was sent outside of the camp.

Hadn’t I been called to lay down my life for the people? Wasn’t it on **July 10, 1997** that I [covenanted](#) with God to do so in response to His command or revelation to me? Hadn’t I been

excluded from their company? While other animals were slain in sacrifices, this goat was sent away alive.

I hadn't died, as Marilyn insisted I would, and still insisted. I'd been sent away alive. The Lord said to me, *"You won't be dying; will you believe Me?"* The people's sins were carried away by that goat. My life was laid down for their sins. Yes, it wasn't my blood that atoned for them but Jesus' blood, and He alone is the Savior of all men; but doesn't He call on members of His Body to fulfill His will, even His Person in certain respects?

Didn't Paul say, **"I, Paul...who now rejoice in my sufferings on your behalf, and I fill up the things lacking of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, on behalf of His Body, which is the Church..." (Colossians 1:24 MKJV)?**

The goat was taken away "by the hand of a fit man." It didn't matter what Sean thought, said, or did. To Marilyn, he could make no mistake and his motives were entirely above reproach, in everything. None could utter a single word of criticism about him that she would accept or believe.

What an amazing spectacle! He had her in a trance and there was absolutely nothing I could do about it. Law wouldn't work; logic and reason wouldn't work; the use of passion, argument, facts, or Scripture was powerless. Her affection for, and devotion to, him were set in stone. They had publicly declared their love for each other, without regret, shame, or apology, and all agree with them. I'd been taken and led away "by the hand of a fit man." I was alone, forsaken by all, in "a land uninhabited."

Particle - Prophecy: My Disciples

These words came to me on December 1, 1998:

"My disciples shall be known as the 'sons of rest' because they have given their bodies to the grave. These and only these shall attain unto the resurrection and shall have resurrection power in their blood. Indeed, that power is their blood and their blood that power, which will then be given that others may have life. The sons of rest are invincible, indestructible – nothing shall by any means hurt them because they loved not their lives unto death. This is that Word of their testimony, that God dwells in them, that He indeed is their God, and that the salvation/redemption of the whole earth is by them and them alone because God is in them and they in God. Only by the anointing of God can creation be redeemed and reconciled to God.

Those who choose to go in their own strength, choosing the crown before the cross, loving their lives, will not only fail to redeem the smallest part of creation, but will lose their own lives, as well. There shall no flesh glory before the Lord. Only those lives which wholly declare that the Lord God reigns over all sit on the throne or do the will of the One on the throne with power to rule and to redeem.

He who lays down his life for My sake inherits all things. He who keeps his life loses even the little that he has. He who keeps himself from Me has nothing in this world or in the world to come.

He who loses all things for My sake is faithful and speaks truth, whose words are as pure gold for them that buy them. His merchandise is legitimate, but the words of thieves and robbers are forgeries, merchandise without certificate. The words of those who seek their own glory testify against them, as hollow as those who speak. Those who have not sold all that they have for Me are as empty clouds which appear to have rain, promising much and delivering little. They are empty wells, dug to reach water and never having reached it to quench the thirst of others.

If producing waters, they are meagre waters and stagnant, sometimes better than nothing and sometimes much worse – deadly. But those who have been dug in a good place and deep, furnish cool, living water to them that pass by and draw from those wells. Those who draw are refreshed, able to continue their journeys and to fulfill their responsibilities.”

Particle - Prinzing’s Pretence

Ray Prinzing had the form, but not the substance. Yet the form was so beguiling, perhaps because of the sufferings he experienced; why hadn’t those sufferings produced the reality? His sufferings weren’t unto life, and he borrowed men’s words. He was very religious, a superficial but persuasive copy of the real.

He suffered but hadn’t submitted to the death within. He never released his heart. He had come closer than some, but close is only worth something in curling, darts, or horseshoes. With the Lord, he who “overcomes unto the end” is the one who is saved.

There’s a remarkable resemblance in a certain respect between those who have overcome and those who have been overcome. Prinzing suffered; he had been overcome; we see the marks, and the marks deceive because there’s respect for suffering. We must know that knowledge and suffering in and of themselves aren’t credentials in the Kingdom of God.

Particle - More to Go

Thursday, December 3rd, 1998:

This is Day 800 from the prophecy, and a full moon. A battle once again with Marilyn. I can’t consent to her marrying Sean while I live, yet I must allow her to do as she chooses and believes. She tells me she doesn’t want to be with me anymore, that she loves Sean more and more. So I say, “Go,” not because I want her to, not because I agree, but because I must let it be.

Whether I’m right or wrong, in the Lord or out of the Lord, Marilyn can’t and doesn’t trust me. Therefore I ask, “Why do you enquire of me if you don’t trust me?” Her great bitterness towards God continues. It focuses on me as all others’ bitterness has. Not a big deal; just a usual pattern.

I no longer feel the way I used to, and I do declare that I’m done with the prophecy, although it seems it’s not done with me. I don’t understand. I don’t have bitterness toward Marilyn and Sean. I have no answers I can give. I only know what I’ve been commanded.

I now have little doubt Marilyn will join herself to Sean while I live on this earth and I'll have to bear it. The development is in that direction, slowly but surely. By her own lips she declares it. Sean says he continues to have his thoughts. I'm powerless to do anything or help anyone in any way.

Marilyn tells me she heard several days ago, when we prayed that the Lord's will be done, that Day 800 would be the completion, a settling of things. Very little is settled with her. She prophesied that I was the Lord's, that she would marry Sean, and not to worry, that the Lord would take care of me.

She also received that there was an example, somewhat hidden and requiring revelation, that was like what we are in now. I can think of three examples: **one**, Israel going after other gods and the Lord putting Israel, His wife, away; **two**, Hosea having to marry a harlot; and **three**, Abigail and Nabal. Perhaps I've been a fool like Nabal, brutish and selfish, and Sean has been given to take Marilyn as David took Abigail. Of course a major difference is that David was only given Abigail as wife after Nabal was dead.

Sean confesses constant, vile and evil thoughts, cursing the Lord, murder, perversion... it is devils, yet I can do nothing.

Particle - Words for Jim Flynn

I called [Jim Flynn](#) on December 5th and said the following:

"All that you are partaking in now concerning the 'Toronto Blessing,' the Charismatic movement, the unity of churches, and ecumenism is a great sweep of delusion, a counterfeit move of God. The baptisms with the Holy Spirit, conversions, signs, and wonders are preponderantly false compared to the true. The rare few people that are exposed to all these works, whose hearts are genuinely after the truth, will escape as a bird out of the snare of the fowler and will go on to know the Lord, if they deny themselves.

You've sought to be of value to the Lord and instead of denying yourself and obeying Him in taking up your cross, you chose to please yourself and please God your way, hoping He would be pleased with you. Your works at present are now not only unacceptable, they are vile to God, as vile as soiled menstrual pads and all sorts of rubbish laid on a comely altar to Him.

You started out well and wandered from there. Vic Graham victimized you. He was a phony. He took you and let you down. He destroyed you but God is able and desires to make you live again, Jim.

What 'great things' and 'hunger' and 'moves of God' you're seeing and participating in right now are the woes coming upon the earth in Satan's wrath, because the Day of the Lord is here and Satan knows he has but a short time. He therefore goes about as a roaring lion seeking whom he may devour but appears as a lamb willing to be devoured, to feed, to bless, and to bring life. It is treachery and falsehood, great delusion."

I was told to encourage him. He ardently resisted as I spoke to him and I didn't react or get angry. Instead, I blessed him, not in his works but out of them. I made that clear to him. I also told him the Lord loved him and was seeking his deliverance. Praise be to God!

I said to the Lord:

Lord, he believes I'm the one in delusion, speaking from Satan. Lord, if we look at our circumstances, if I look at my wife and am honest, I would have to believe and acknowledge that Jim is right and I am wrong. He speaks of having the joy of the Lord, so much so that he is ready to burst. He speaks of Sikhs in Vancouver getting healed and converted, of leading people to the Lord and loving them. He speaks of the simplicity of the Gospel, of You, Lord. He seems to rejoice and have wonderful meaning to life... in You.

Meanwhile, here's Sean in vile bondage, my wife in great bitterness, her heart set on Sean, Trevor in dissatisfaction, Lois in belligerence and turmoil, and all the others scattered to the wind in horrible unbelief, bitterness, and defeat. The farm ("my money") has the few of us confined, oppressed, preoccupied, and terribly troubled.

Lord, is it not Jim who is walking with You in peace and spiritual prosperity, while I slowly but surely destroy us all with self-seeking, covetousness, and entrapment? Do I not bind those about me? Have I not railed, abused, blasphemed, and cursed? Aren't we all in the final throes of dispersion and destruction, missing out, excluded from wonderful things You're doing now with people everywhere?

Lord, if we're deluded, I ask You, above all things, to deliver us from our sins, our delusions, and our destructions. Mercy, Lord, mercy! With Jim and all others, I'm out on the farthest tip of the limb, and if I'm in evil, I'm about to fall and be trampled underfoot by all men, not for righteousness' sake, but for evil. If so, my judgment is just and I have worked proudly and presumptuously against You, and You alone.

If these things are so, Lord, am I ever deluded! So much so that I stubbornly stand with constant hardened heart, in spite of all judgment and evidence against me, even as did Pharaoh, to my own destruction and that of those with me.

I also told Jim that Reinhard Bonnke and Vic Graham were false prophets, speaking truths but not The Truth. He vehemently disagreed. He said, "When you tell people they're wrong, or call them false prophets, you're putting yourself up on a pedestal." I asked him if Jesus was putting Himself on a pedestal calling the Pharisees a brood of vipers.

If I'm wrong, I'm utterly unrepentant and can only believe that as the Lord's will was to harden Pharaoh's heart, choosing him as a vessel of dishonor, so the Lord's will is with me that He might be glorified, His power shown for those around to witness it. And there's absolutely nothing I can do about it. Who am I to resist God? But I believe I'm right and must go on to the death.

Father, yet another request do I have. If I **am** deluded, serving my own cause, spare Jonathan. Please spare him. Keep him, Lord, and bless him. Also redeem all the others as You choose and see fit. I recognize that we older ones have all made choices and that I'm not necessarily the only one to blame.

Contrary to the apostle John's admonition in 2 John 1:10-11 not to bless those who preach another gospel, I blessed Jim when he insisted on it, but I qualified it by blessing him not in his works, but that the Lord would deliver him from them. I told him that he would see what I was talking about and that it would hurt, but he would remember. Some of what I said he repeatedly called "baloney." I wasn't offended but I could feel he was starting to offend the Lord and would have to suffer some.

Among other things, he said my word to him was satanic, not agreeing with Scripture. I said my word agreed with Scripture, but millions interpret the Scriptures their own way, not having or receiving the Life of the Written Word.

Particle - Jonathan Rejoices

I told Jonathan I had talked to Jim Flynn. He rejoiced and exuberantly thanked me for doing so. As I review this portion in my journal and record it here for this work, I wonder at the strange event. Why was it so pleasing to him?

Particle - A Vision of Heaven

I had a vision of Heaven among us. Each crucified to self, each being here for the others... all of them. [Harvest Haven Vision](#) describes it and today I saw it. What beauty! What joy, peace, fulfillment, love, and rest! It was held out to all of us and all of us rejected it out of hand because we sought our own selfish agendas. Seeking to get, we got Hell. If we give everything away, we receive all and far more than we ever hoped to get.

If but one among us seeks his own benefit, the whole body is sick. Unrepentant, that one must be expelled. **"A little leaven leavens the whole lump."** I saw it.

Particle - The Gathering

For a number of days, in thinking of Gene and Vicky coming to this area from Saskatchewan, I felt a preparing, a swelling, a coming to the fore of something within, a growing compassion, a desire to gather the hurting, the lost, the discomforted, the "homeless," the sick, naked, hungry, thirsty, lonely, confused, and fearful... into a family of those who care for one another. People upon whom is the drawing of the Lord are searching for their usefulness and purpose in Him; they are looking for a family of likeminded searchers. They look for a home, a safe haven of belonging and rest. It is these to whom we must open our arms and receive, without looking to gain for ourselves in any way. In giving, we will receive more than heart could wish.

There are those who search for a "church home." These are not necessarily ones the Lord is drawing. Many are the malcontents and predators, the bitter and rebellious, who wish out of pride, self-seeking, and even out of vengeance to take advantage of a community, looking to get and not to give, to rule and not serve and obey, hoping for maximum reward with minimum contribution, serving only where it would bring disproportionate reward.

Let the rebellious dwell alone in dry places; let the covetous do without; let the sluggard not eat; let the proud rule over his empty domain; let the socialite be isolated from the people of God. Let the people come who seek after God without conditions, reservations, or agendas other than to do His will, no matter how hard or contrary to their own desires and pleasures; let such as these come.

Let them come home after so long a time being strangers and misfits everywhere in the world and in Babylon. Let them return to build the old waste places, not according to the ways of man and the harlot, but by the mighty hand of God, Who gathers together His sheep to Himself.

On December 7, 1998, I wrote [The Gathering](#), declaring that this was now the time of the Lord, the Feast of Tabernacles, His Coming, the entering into rest, the day of the reconciliation of Heaven and earth. I had a strong impulse within to see people gathered now, not unto me or unto us, and I wanted no part in “supervising” (the best word I can think of) others. I wish to rule, but not as this world knows ruling. The ruling of this world is terribly burdensome and futile. I wish to rest and to minister, not to lord it over any.

Particle - Repent and Enjoy the Short Time

I was again bothered about all sorts of financial problems and losses, even though we were not directly threatened. I asked Jonathan to help me. “*Repent,*” he received, denying it was prophecy when I asked him to help me pray. We concluded that the repenting was to stop dwelling on these material things, that I would not get anywhere fretting - never did.

“Get on with your life; put those things away, enjoy the short time you have with me,” said Jonathan. How true were those words! The Lord was speaking by him. Would I heed the counsel?

Particle - Knowledge of Good and Evil

Eating from the Tree of Knowledge brings torment. Receiving knowledge of good and evil without having the Law of God in the inward parts is like a fool receiving a large inheritance or winning a big lottery. Histories of lottery winners have been traced and assessed. Without experience in having and managing money, most winners ended up as terrible losers in many ways. So it is with knowledge without wisdom. Knowledge is a dangerous thing if not coming contained and harnessed in wisdom. In the Tree of Life is wisdom, understanding, and righteousness accompanying the knowledge of good and evil.

Particle - The Sign of the Son of Man

I asked the Lord, “What is the ‘sign of the Son of Man’ (Matthew 24:30)?” With great battle, the Lord answered. The answer is the laying down of one’s life. Jesus came to lay down His life, to give it a ransom for many. What is the cross but an instrument of execution and of death, the one employed when the Son of Man laid down His life for us all? The sign, Jesus said, appears in Heaven (the spiritual realm). When the Lord comes again in a man, when a man becomes a manifest son of God, that man has laid down his life and *that* is the sign whereby those who are given to perceive will know that Jesus Christ comes in the flesh (1John 4:2-3). It is His sign.

Particle - Jonathan’s Prophecy - “All Made Right in 2000”

On the morning of December 13, 1998, Day 810, while Marilyn and I were in spiritual conflict, Jonathan said, “Dad, I just had a prophecy. Remember you said that God was going to make everything right? Well, I just heard that *everything is going to change in the year 2000.*”

Jonathan also prophesied on December 28th, “*You’ll be going,*” when I asked that the Lord take me.

We would see if he was right on either count.

Particle - Notice to Mills, Knorrs, and Their Friend, Trudy

Gene and Vicky Knorr, Les and Penny Mills, and their friend, Trudy Lazet, came by for a visit that lasted five hours. I gave them writings, including [The Gathering](#), [Counterfeit Christianity](#), [The Case for Coming Out](#), [The Wrath of God](#), and the poem, [Mystery](#). I told them what was the sign of the Son of Man, that they had been eating from the Tree of Knowledge, that the Feast of Tabernacles was now, that Ray Prinzing didn't know what he was talking about, and that all that was happening with Marilyn and Sean was purposed in order to fulfill the things necessary for this time.

I then spoke to Trudy, who had come from a traumatic past of domestic abuse. I told her that every stitch of her terrible life was meant to be and purposed, that the Lord was guiding her every footstep to this very hour, and that she was at Mark and Amanda Ogdens' to witness the fruits of those choosing to go their own way. She was to witness the consequences because she herself was not obeying. Their plight ought to serve as a warning to her.

On the 18th of December, I wrote the Mills, Knorrs, and Trudy, discussing many things, prophesying, admonishing, rebuking, and exhorting. I expected that what I was saying would be disregarded, as it was.

Though the Ogdens had no money and sought for others to provide for them, they smoked, went to movies and restaurants, and traveled to Ontario for Christmas, shutting down their business for three weeks. They owed the government \$3,000 for income taxes and more for GST (sales tax). Their car was a wreck. They had children to feed, who were malnourished, with another on the way. Mark continued to spend time and energy in a loser political party that I said would avail him nothing. Amanda fantasized about a house in Barons while they borrowed money from her family in Ontario. What a mess! And they wouldn't listen, presuming to be ministers of God to reach us in our darkness and delusion.

Were these Christians? What blasphemy! They were a vile discredit to the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ in every way, yet they thought to do Him service. Of such as these, Jude wrote:

“These people are warts on your love feasts as you worship and eat together. They’re giving you a black eye—carousing shamelessly, grabbing anything that isn’t nailed down. They’re—puffs of smoke pushed by gusts of wind; late autumn trees stripped clean of leaf and fruit, doubly dead, pulled up by the roots; wild ocean waves leaving nothing on the beach but the foam of their shame; lost stars in outer space on their way to the black hole” (Jude 1:12-13 MSG).

Particle - Lawless Rebels in God's Name

In dealing and trying to reason with Gene and Vicky Knorr, Les and Penny Mills, Barny and Helgrid Knelsen, Mark and Amanda Ogden, Erin Schipper, Debbie Summers, Trudy Lazet, and any others with whom they had to do in spiritual terms, I only found stubbornness and rebellion. They were all set on doing their own thing. We could see they had suffered the fruits of their wayward ways, but as Marilyn said, *“They have suffered, but they haven't suffered enough.”*

I had come to know that they were the questionable characters in that [new world](#) on which I had landed. Were they enemies or friends? I had little time to decide. They came as friends but they came to slay, being children of the murderer and deceiver. According to the vision, I prevailed.

Particle - Vision: A Soldier Beaten Playing Games

On December 17, 1998, I saw Gene Knorr as a weary, beaten soldier, in rags, unshaven, a flimsy helmet askew on his head, and a weapon held against his shoulder as a soldier at attention. Gene seemed a bit amused as though it was all a game, but it hadn't been and wasn't a game. The "game" had taken its toll on him.

Particle - The Essence of the Tree of Knowledge

Can all men or only sons of God eat from the Tree of Knowledge? All can do so. The beast, that serpent, had the same access as Adam and Eve, but the beast didn't die, not because he didn't partake, but because he wasn't alive to begin with. He didn't have the relationship with God that Adam and Eve had. Adam and Eve were "living souls," because inbreathed with God's Spirit. The beast was merely a soul, a man without contact with the Spirit of God.

The unregenerate man is a beast, otherwise known as the "man of sin." Can the "man of sin" be converted? He can, by doctrine, but only in the soul, not in the spirit. Thus we have so many different beliefs and exclusive religious, political, social, and philosophical groups.

Men prefer to eat from the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. If they get knowledge, they think there will no longer be any need for anyone to tell them what to do, seeing they'll know it all themselves, being as gods. One won't find "dos" and "don'ts" in the Tree of Knowledge. The Law of God can only be found in the Tree of Life.

When Adam and Eve partook of the Tree of Knowledge, they were already saying, "We don't want Law; don't tell us what and what not to do. We want to be independent of the authority of God." The serpent discredited the Law, saying God had selfish motives for giving commandment.

"The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple" (Psalms 19:7 Webster).

But knowledge puffs up (1 Corinthians 8:1).

Particle - Dream of Flying

On the night of December 17th, I dreamt that I was flying. I hadn't dreamt of flying for many years. There was a significant difference in this dream compared to those in the past. In previous dreams, I had a hard time gaining altitude. I would try to believe as if by willpower that I could lift up and/or go faster. This time it wasn't a matter of believing I could go higher or faster, but of believing I was where I wanted to be. If I was 10 feet off the ground and wanted to be a mile up, I believed I was a mile up and, instantly, I was there! Very different.

"Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask in prayer, believe that you *have received it*, and it will be yours." (Mark 11:24 ESV)

A problem we have is worshipping the means rather than the end, the "flying power" rather than the reason for which it was given - the destination. In this dream, I didn't have the compelling desire for the flying in itself now, but rather for accomplishing what was needed by the flying.

Particle - Lois' Vision: Gene and Les Lassoed

On December 17 or 18, 1998, Lois had a vision wherein she saw Gene Knorr and Les Mills lassoed together, tightly, back-to-back. She said I had roped them and they were caught solidly.

Particle - George Warnock of Cranbrook, BC

In reading Warnock's literature, particularly *Who Are You?*, written in 1985, I perceived that he was still trying to prove himself right to the "church" at large, with which he came into conflict, was rejected, and from which he came out. He was still trying to prove his worthiness to the harlot. She continued to impress him with her legitimacy and respectability. This could mean only one thing: He was still hers.

Particle - Constricting Throat

For about a month, I was experiencing difficulty with my throat, just below the voice box, which increased to the point where it was difficult to swallow and even breathe. I had an appointment with Dr. Michael Pratt, who diagnosed me and concluded stress was the cause. Curiously, both Marilyn and Lois expressed happiness that there was nothing seriously wrong with me (they had suspected thyroid problems).

Particle - Let's Get On with It

While lying in her bed next to mine, Marilyn repeatedly said, "I want to be with him" (Sean).

No more! I didn't want this anymore. No uglier words can a wife speak to her husband. If I'm to let it happen, so be it, but this I knew: While the Lord let His people go to strange gods (other husbands), He felt bad, even angry, so I knew He wasn't expecting me to be happy about it. He went so far as to put away *His* wife. I couldn't see it going on this way, and Marilyn wouldn't change. For the first time, I felt indignant. And who in his right mind wouldn't? It was despicable.

If this was judgment on me, so be it, but disgust now began to form in me. Was this the laying down of my life? Possibly, probably not, but I almost felt like it didn't matter anymore.

I told Lois how I felt. She called for prayer and asked Sean to join her. They prayed and she received that we were to do nothing but wait and trust the Lord.

Particle - Tormenting Dream of Reality

During this time, I had a dream that Marilyn and Sean were going places together, and Jonathan was with them (as it had been, in part). At one point, in front of me, Sean was stroking the back of Marilyn's head. I felt bad and so alone, and I said to Marilyn, "I can't go on anymore, Marilyn, I can't do it."

She was happy, saying, "You need to. It's penetrating deep, isn't it? You don't have any choice."

I replied, "Yes, I'll go on." I usually expressed anger at it all, and just two days before, I felt indignation, but I was hurting, that's what it was... just plain hurting.

"Lord, forgive me for complaining, resisting, not believing. You are Righteous Altogether, Just and True, and Perfectly Faithful. You Are. And I thank You for making me to Be, and to Be with and in You, and You in me, even so that I am You, so One we are by Your doing."

Particle - Gene Attacks

They hired Gene at the farm to help build a chicken barn. During that time, Gene was cynical, sarcastic, and speaking to others, Sean and Trevor in particular, urging them to leave the farm, saying it was no less than a “work of Babylon.” (Yet there he was, participating in our “work of Babylon” and being paid by me for it.)

Particle - A Letter to Harvest Haven Farm

On December 29, 1998, I was moved to write a letter to those at the farm - Lois, Marilyn, Sean, and Trevor:

Do you know forgiveness of your sins - from the Lord, from each other? Have you forgiven one another? Has the Lord forgiven you? Do you know that?

I see you all justifying yourselves, pointing your fingers at the rest, proud, stubborn know-it-alls, each protecting him and herself.

So you have some revelation and knowledge. So you're personally acquainted with someone who has unusual doctrine and revelation and who speaks out to others and condemns other doctrines and systems. So you have intelligence and can criticize and see others' faults and shortcomings, weaknesses and contradictions.

We talk about faith, trusting, the Lord, believing but a tiny few of His words (or trying to), but what about acknowledgment of our sins? What about conviction of sin, confession, and genuine repentance?

I see you all justifying yourselves, protecting your own turf, pursuing your own agendas, preferences, aspirations, goals - selfishly, stubbornly, proudly so.

And I fear the Lord's wrath is there, ready to be poured out. Has He preserved a remnant in spite of itself, out of mercy? I hope so. Can we continue as we are? No damn way!

Will I see change in you? All I've seen when I've spoken thus is a casual question from Sean, a little excitement from Lois, a blank face and yawn from Trevor, hair-standing on Marilyn, and worry with me - all these things momentarily, and back to the same old status of talking, surmising, analyzing, criticizing, fighting, accusing, resenting, and covetousness; some weak, insincere, unrepentant prayers here and there, mostly there....

What will Les, Gene, and others witness? Holy lives - lives of genuine love, forgiveness, forbearance, patience, and humility - consequently, conviction of sin and a desire to be part of us? Will they be able to tell we're the Lord's disciples by love for one another?

How righteous we are! Too tough for them! They're like little kids - can't take the fires! Boy, are we tough! Look at us shine in our trials and sorrows! Look how mature we are! Yep, the Lord is sure doing things with us! Look at those guys! See how they fall short!

People, what can I say? What can I do? Because of wickedness, pride, the pointing finger, the smiting fist, the stubborn adamancy in serving ourselves, we perish unless major change comes, and I do mean *major*.

I faint in hope, but the Lord has been known to be merciful, quite able, and faithful. God have mercy on us all! Perhaps I speak out of doubts and fears. You people decide for yourselves. The enemy is sweet and vicious, and very effective.

Victor

Particle - The Year 1998

What a battle it was! I'd say 1998 was not at all as hard for me as 1997, but hard nonetheless. The difference between the two years was primarily that I had victory in battle in 1998, though my infirmities argued otherwise. These infirmities were accepted on February 6th of this year, and in that alone, I had peace - accepting myself the way I am, agreeing to serve the Lord as I am, and not longing to serve as I would want to be (perfect in every way). Ironically, this is perfection in itself.

Particle - The Spectacle

I sat down and wrote the following on December 30, 1998 but didn't bring it forth until later:

The angels are in sackcloth and heap ashes on their heads. With their left hands, they hold their noses, and with their right, they shield their eyes in agonizing shame as they hang their heads and slump to the ground in horrible grief at what is before them.

A woman lays on her back, naked before the very throne of God with her legs drawn up and spread apart. It is Marilyn. Down on her comes the seductive serpent, Sean, with erection, about to enter her. Says Marilyn, "I'm doing this for You, Lord, anything for You, Lord. Your will, not mine be done. Though I don't understand it, it is what You desire of me and so I do it."

The Lord sits quietly watching. Part of Him is supremely distressed.

"Why have I created such creatures that would so debase themselves? How could I do such a thing? Now must I cleanse not only the earth but Heaven, too. On this woman will I have mercy because, in her delusion, which I have sent for My purposes, and in her ignorance and waywardness, seduced as was Eve, she thought to hear My voice and do My will. I will cleanse her and heal her and receive her back to Me again, but with a difference: Now will she serve Me with all her heart, soul, mind, and strength. No longer will she think in her heart that I owe her, but will know that she is greatly and forever indebted to Me.

As for this presumptuous one who seeks to feed himself without fear before man and God, I will displace him even as he has displaced others, and I will take from him even as he has taken from others without regard, without mercy, without feeling or conscience. I have ordained all this for My servant's sake, and when all is done, My servant will be My son and reign with Me on My throne. While the serpent has bruised his heel, he shall bruise the serpent's head.

Sean has been offered everything. He has been afforded every opportunity for repentance. He has been loved, shown mercy, and given privilege and status far beyond his worth. Not only has

he despised all the good, he has mocked and defecated on it. I have made him subtle and clever for the time appointed, but he will not continue or prevail.

How darkened and blind is Marilyn! How deluded and denuded! How has her bitterness deceived her! How has she been seduced!"

But the saints understand. They know the "other part" of God Who has purposed all these things according to the counsel of His own will. The angels don't understand now, but they will hereafter, and not only understand but marvel and be thankful.

They had stood ready, with sword in hand, to take vengeance upon the participants of this spectacle, both of them, even as Phinehas, zealous for the Lord, took a javelin and thrust through a man of Israel and a Midianite woman, while they defiled themselves in front of Moses and the whole congregation of Israel. But this time the angels were stayed until all things are fulfilled. Then with pleasure will they remove the vile one and be thankful, rejoicing.

Particle - God Prunes Again and Again

With Sean's help, and in cases by his provocation, Marilyn expelled Cathie, Erin, Archie, and Ben. By Sean's provocation, I was wrathful on Danny. By his initiative, Kerri was cast out, and Marilyn sent both Kerri and Paul packing (yes, I was moved by her influence to agree and act with her - I'm responsible, too). By Sean's contention and provocation, Chris and Nathan left. By his choice and cunning, I was also subtly, shrewdly rejected and ejected.

And all these things had to be. Many have been expelled, and each time one was, there was hope for cessation of contention, strife, and reproach. But these hadn't ceased. A semblance of peace came only when all submitted to the will and judgment of Sean and his lover. Yet those submitting could have no peace, even after years of struggle.

Particle - You Will Know Them by Their Fruits

Sean was accepted, included, and honored. I gave him a choice between me and what is mine; I told him I saw a ministry for him; I told him I loved him and was excited about him. He once told me he loved me, but that was when I was surrendering my wife to him. He had despised everything, rejecting all good, scorning it, scorning all of us, scorning God Himself.

It's incredible to me how Sean entered my house a stranger and immediately carried my wife up to our marriage bed, and my wife gladly opened her legs to him. How has she hated God! How has she hated! How bitter! "Hell hath no fury...."

Never was there such bitterness and chafing against me by my wife until Sean came along, and he loved to have it so - he took delight in it. How depressed he became if he perceived some possibility of reconciliation between Marilyn and me!

Does true love enjoy lawlessness? Can one whose countenance falls for such reasons love anybody? Battle and division between Marilyn and me was never a concern to Sean. I once heard him chuckle on the phone when he heard us not getting along.

The only time Sean wished to involve me was when he wanted to demonstrate some patronizing token of reconciliation or tolerance with me, and even that was no longer happening. Now it was only contempt, more and more openly.

The problem wouldn't be solved until the scorner of scornors was eliminated. The time drew near. As Judas served for three years leading to his ultimate purpose, so Sean had served with purpose and would soon be finished.

Particle - Prophetic Gifts Have Expressed the Ugly Reality

Even visions came that denounced them and their relationship. There was my [vision](#) and Sean's own vision of him mocking, Lois angry, and Marilyn silly. By the way, just before we were married in 1974, I saw Marilyn carry on in silliness with some students, a conduct which disturbed me and which I could not enter into. I thought perhaps the fault lay with me somehow, that I was jealous or possessive or too "spiritual" or something.

There were other [visions](#) which spoke of Sean's character, as the one sitting on a throne, crown askew, robe in disarray, with a smirk on his face (I have seen it for real) - a novice corrupted.

Sean had one of himself - that of a commanding army officer, inept and foolish. How true! Had there been positive dreams or visions of him?

Particle - Reality Adds to Revelation

Lois often spoke of Marilyn giggling with Sean. Given the circumstances, only an evil woman could conduct herself so. Marilyn said she prayed and asked the Lord if she was in adultery. She said He said, "No." Yet both had their sexual thoughts and several fantasies, he looking on her with lust and she on him. Sean called recently, wanting to take Marilyn to the farm. He said the Lord said to him, "I give her to you, naked. Don't be ashamed." He said it was a reversal of Adam and Eve in the garden where they were naked, ashamed, and God covered them.

I prayed, asking, "Lord, show me the truth of this whole situation." Now here it came. I knew the Lord wanted to show me, even as I began to ask, and I said, "Lord, now You want to show me, don't You?" But Marilyn would still not believe, nor would she until it was all accomplished.

If God was sending strong delusion (2 Thessalonians 2:11), what else would Marilyn hear? What else would she want to hear? In her hopes and passion for Sean, did she want to hear that she was an adulteress? We can only hear from God when we're unbiased, prepared to accept whatever He wills. She heard from the man of sin in her, who spoke as God. Scrap altogether what the Lord Jesus or I have had to say. That would be legalism - bondage - sentimentality!

Particle - What Could We Expect?

When the Lord was finished with Marilyn and Sean, then would all contention and strife cease; then would people desire to come; then would there be peace and joy; then would we rest as when a painful thorn has been finally removed at long last. And the Lord would recall His sheep, which the wolf scattered when He struck the shepherd.

There must come a time when the Lord opens Marilyn's eyes and she vomits out that which has made her ill. Suddenly aware, she would be ashamed and utterly repentant of how she has been and what she has done.

Then will I be required to take back a defiled wife. Often this is out of the question for man, at least a very unpleasant task, if not an impossibility. How could I? It could only happen if I died, no longer being the husband she had; then she would no longer be the wife I had, and all this by the grace and goodness of God Almighty.

Particle - The Man of Destruction Appointed to Destruction

Satan serves the purposes of God on the dark side, which side is every bit as necessary as the light. Not only saints, but all men do the will of God even as did Ishmael, Esau, Joseph's brothers, Jannes and Jambres, Pharaoh, Balaam, Absalom, Rehoboam, Nebuchadnezzar, the Sabeans, Genghis Khan, Judas, the Romans, Muhammad, Hitler, Marx, Stalin, Obama... every one of them, parallel with those whom God has chosen as His vessels of honor.

Signs and lying wonders are performed by the man of sin, this evil one, this first Adam who was created in the image of God, who is called a son of God, and who has latent powers of God. But all these things must be, and the deception will be so powerful the elect themselves would be stumped for a time, as we have been.

"Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders..."

"And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness..." appearing as righteous....

Why?

"Because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved" (2 Thessalonians 2:9-10).

What truth? The Law of God, the testimony of the Scriptures such as, **"Husbands love your wives," "Wives, submit to your husbands," "If a man even look at a woman with lust," "Women are to be silent in the churches...."**

Marilyn ran everything - not only did she not *ask* her husband at home but *told* him abroad (1 Corinthians 14:35) and, in all hypocrisy, praised and trashed me at the same time.

We were sent strong delusion that we should believe a lie, so that the man of sin, the son of perdition within, who doesn't love the truth, would be exposed and finally done away with.

What was now happening looked like destruction, and it was, but truly, it was medicine and healing in disguise. Evil was being destroyed. That is why God couldn't tell us anything. The left hand mustn't know what the right hand does, as Jesus admonished. The strong man mustn't be warned before his house is broken into; else he would be ready to avoid loss. If God had stood in the Garden, Eve would not have fallen to temptation. But so it had to be, and so for us.

I often wondered how it was I couldn't see or understand what the Lord was doing, seeing how the Scripture says God does nothing but that He shows it to His prophets. While at first, I didn't see these things, yet the Lord long ago showed me. As I expressed them and wasn't believed, I myself didn't believe, but He has shown me what He's doing, why He's doing it, and what the outcome will be, at least in part. And it's all so necessary and good. The Lord is delivering our souls.

Particle - The Sliver and Beam

Marilyn thought Lois had a problem of putting me on a pedestal. Speak of a beam in one's eye!

Kerri was given the gift of seeing subtle things, as [prophesied](#). She saw Sean's subtlety, the subtle beast - the serpent in the garden. But Kerri wouldn't listen to me or to anyone else; she fought and consequently left us no choice but to expel her. Fine to have knowledge and revelation, but what one does with it is what is important:

"And if I have prophetic powers, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and if I have all faith, so as to remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing" (1 Corinthians 13:2 ESV).

Particle - Lois' Vision: Marilyn Walks through the Valley of Death

On January 4, 1999, while in prayer, Lois had a vision of Marilyn standing with arms raised to the sky. From behind her came flying a large white bird. Marilyn was turned in the opposite direction, away from the bird to a dark valley immediately before her. She had an expression of peace, resignation, and determination to go into and through the valley as a necessity. At the other end of this valley was a bright light.

Particle - Another Horrible Battle with Marilyn

On January 5, 1999, Marilyn and I had another horrible battle. I was struggling with Sean, with the situation, with recent neck pains that wouldn't go away, with rejection, with nothing to have or to do, with doubts, and with my body weight.

Marilyn was so utterly embittered. She laid the blame for everything squarely at my feet and I didn't care if she was wrong - let her be right about that - likely was; I really didn't know. Would God not bring to conclusion this hell into which He had cast us? ***"Lord, where are You? When will You come and deliver us from ourselves, from me?"***

Particle - Sean Holds Us Hostage

On the night of January 6-7, 1999, I saw Sean was holding us hostage; he was the main culprit in all the divisions between us. I'd seen the same before at various times. That morning Marilyn awoke wanting to talk and said she was very angry with Sean because he had gone out doing as it pleased him once again. This was in spite of talking to him and always, always trying to help him.

He was incorrigible. He said he loved Marilyn and Jonathan and wanted to do what was right, but he was a liar. I also recognized that while he talked of being and doing right, the fruits weren't there. Yet Marilyn, Lois, Trevor, Mark, and Paul, with all their problems, faults, and weaknesses, seemed to have at least a touch of faith or care, though they didn't talk about it.

Lois prophesied to Marilyn that she was helping Sean, but he didn't deserve it. I agreed with that and believed my prophecies concerning Marilyn and Sean. (See [Prophecies for Individuals](#) and [A Word Concerning Sean](#).)

Particle - Lois' Vision: Wineskin Dregs

On January 7, 1999, Lois had a vision of a wineskin at the end of its supply, dregs at the bottom, and she thought of me. I recall her telling me about it, and I knew it pertained to me.

Particle - The Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, and Knelsens

Of these people, I saw these Scriptures fulfilled:

“For certain men crept in secretly, those having been of old previously written into this condemnation, ungodly ones perverting the grace of our God for unbridled lust, and denying the only Master, God, even our Lord Jesus Christ” (Jude 1:4 MKJV).

“In the same way these dreamers make the flesh unclean, having no respect for authorities, and say evil of rulers” (Jude 1:8 BBE).

“But these speak blasphemously of those things which they do not know; but what they do know naturally, like unreasoning animals, they are destroyed by these things. Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain, and in the error of Balaam they have rushed for profit, and have perished in the rebellion of Korah. These are stains in your love feasts, while they feast with you without fear, caring for themselves, they are waterless clouds being carried along by winds; late autumn trees unfruitful, twice having died, having been uprooted, raging waves on the sea, casting up the foam of their own shame; wandering stars for whom the darkness of the netherworld has been reserved forever” (Jude 1:10-13 EMTV).

They were indeed a self-righteous, presumptuous, arrogant, stiffnecked, light, and rebellious bunch.

Particle - Law and Grace

I much pondered matters of Law and Grace and their place. Gene accused me of representing Law that is no longer in force as it was with and by Moses, yet Moses and Elijah both appeared on the mount of transfiguration with Jesus. Elijah was there on the mount with, and not instead of, Moses. Oh, how those who hate the Law of God argue and contradict themselves!

Particle - Laying On of Hands Only for Central Feast of Three

There are three main Feasts God gave to Israel, each representing a spiritual experiential stage in the life of the believer. These are Passover, Pentecost, and Tabernacles, representing repentance, receiving the Spirit, and sanctification - the entrance into rest or Christ coming and establishing Himself finally in the believer who has matured in Him - it is the overcoming spoken of to the churches in Revelation.

I've never heard of anyone laying hands on someone in prayer that they might receive repentance. I've never heard of anyone being *rightly* prayed for with the laying on of hands in order to enter into rest. (I have, however, seen it once informally taught and practised in 1975 by Steve and Ilene Rudd of the Northern Canadian Evangelical Mission in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan. I believe they received this teaching at a Bible college in the US.) It is a false teaching because the third Feast is all about overcoming, and one doesn't overcome by being prayed for.

The two events of repentance and sanctification are represented by the first Feast, Passover, held in the first month of the year by God's designation, and by the third Feast, Tabernacles, held in

the seventh month. However, with the second Feast, Pentecost, held in the third month, often (not always) people are prayed for to receive the Spirit of God, and the prayer includes the laying on of hands that the Holy Spirit might be imparted. For examples, Ananias in Damascus laid hands on Saul to receive his sight and the Holy Spirit (Acts 9) and Paul laid hands on the Ephesian disciples to receive the Holy Spirit (Acts 19).

A parallel to these three Feasts is the arrangement of the Tabernacle of Moses, of which there were three parts. The outer court had natural light, the Holy Place had candlelight, and the Holy of Holies had no light at all, God being the Light.

As one having received the gift of repentance, I still thought and understood naturally. As ones having received the Spirit, we had a light that often comes by the laying on of hands (in our case, however, nobody laid hands on us as with those at Pentecost in the upper room and Cornelius and the Gentiles, for examples). Candles are a light that comes by the “laying on of hands,” that is, a work by the agency of man.

But entering rest means that God is the Light. We no longer go by reasoning or by any effort on our part. Now we rest; there is no sun in the city of God, for God is the Light:

“And night shall not exist. And there shall not be a need of a lamp and of light, because the Lord God shall illuminate them. And they shall reign forever and ever” (Revelation 22:5 EMTV).

There is no light in the Holy of Holies because God is there, giving a light that passes all understanding, not at all discerned by the carnal man, who continues to reside in darkness.

Particle - The Purpose of the Law of God

Contrary to those who say otherwise, we do not dispense with the Law of God now that we have tasted His grace. Neither would we remove it simply because it doesn’t change human nature. God’s Law is ever legitimate for the following purposes:

- 1) to represent the nature of God;
- 2) to constrain the lawless; and
- 3) to expose lawlessness.

By the Law, I know my sin. Without the Law, I’m ignorant of my need before God. By His Law, I’m acquainted with God’s character. I discover that He’s so high above me and that I can never have fellowship with Him until I’m like Him. But the part men hate most and fight tooth and nail against concerning the Law is that the Law operates as a restraining force until man comes to have his change of nature, whereby he is no longer lawless. The Law of itself changes nobody, but it must be present as a tutor until that change comes.

Galatians 3:21-25 HNV

(21) Is the Law then against the promises of God? Certainly not! For if there had been a law given which could make alive, most certainly righteousness would have been of the Law.

(22) But the Scriptures imprisoned all things under sin, that the promise by faith in Yeshua the Messiah might be given to those who believe.

(23) But before faith came, we were kept in custody under the Law, confined for the faith which should afterwards be revealed.

(24) So that the Law has become our tutor to bring us to Messiah, that we might be justified by faith.

(25) But now that faith has come, we are no longer under a tutor.

Particle - Trevor's Dream: Law and Grace

In the night of January 13-14, 1999, Trevor dreamt that both Law and Grace went forth from me in accordance to where people were coming from and what was needed. Also, he received that it would not be much longer that I would have to deal out the Law to them.

Particle - Laying Down My Life

How clever Satan is in shutting the mouths of those who know the Truth! A common notion among evangelical Christians is that they must be gentle and quiet, without speaking anything that might create strife or tension. That is why, for example, nobody dares make a peep in "church services." All is kept formal and proper, with a pretentious decorum that stifles all reality.

Often have I had the secret, if not open, notion that I am not to argue (though I could seldom prevent myself) or take a stand on matters, lest I should upset someone and make people uncomfortable. Often I've seen people shrink away sheepishly or fearfully when I bring up or respond to controversial issues, especially publicly.

But the Lord has demonstrated good things to me when I have spoken up. I've seen people liberated and thankful. He has shown me that I'm not laying down my life as a Christian by being "meek," respectful, polite, diplomatic, politically correct, uncontroversial, and quiet. On the contrary, I'm keeping my life; I'm saving my skin.

I lay down my life for His sake by "shouting from the housetops" that which He has spoken in my ear. I endanger myself socially, economically, and in other ways when I speak the Truth. The world hates the Truth. The Devil hates the Truth; the prince of darkness hates the Light because it exposes him, and if I speak the Truth, his world is upset.

By speaking up, I rock the boat and make waves. It costs to do that. They will throw me out of the boat, even if the waters are shark-infested and I'm miles from shore.

Particle - Hardest Letter Yet to the Mills and Knorrs

Shall I speak the naked, direct Truth to those who need to hear hard things? I've debated that so many times, with some fear, and now I debated it again because I was working on yet another letter to send to the Mills and the Knorrs, a hard one - likely the hardest of all. I saw their wickedness and corruption, and I couldn't help but speak.

Dated January 17, 1999, I had Sean deliver the six-page letter into Gene's hand at the farm (Gene was working there). So that I could talk to them directly, it was given them in a sealed envelope with the request that they not open it until we were to meet.

They paid no attention to my request, belligerently opening it on the way to our place and proudly declaring so. Did this very act not prove the veracity of the contents of the letter?

Marilyn was home and stood with me when meeting them. I was surprised that we were standing together on anything at this time. I concluded that they were a threat to her, seeing they had

confronted her on Sean. So even I was acceptable as an ally to her when standing against her perceived enemies.

In the letter, I sharply rebuked the Knorrs and Mills, directly telling them they were the “synagogue of Satan,” as the Lord had told me months before. Still, when they came over to talk, it seemed to me I was quite meek and passive with them in person for the first while; I had little to say. However, after some attacks and absurdities from them, I stood up. Marilyn said to them that she stood with me in what I had to say to them. Three and a half hours later, they left.

That night, I came to realize that the [vision](#) came to pass with Les and Gene.

Jonathan had a prophecy, saying, “Dad, those [boulders shaking](#) are Satan.”

Particle - Shinji Shumeikai of America

Masa, Sam, and other Japanese fellows were operating a grain farm they were renting from Joe and Mary Slovak, organic farmer acquaintances of ours living near Wrentham, AB. The Japanese were working for Shinji Shumeikai of America. We became acquainted with them at farmer’s markets and in some more personal and direct dealings. When I saw their leaflet outlining their beliefs and spiritual stance, I was moved to respond with a [four-page paper](#), addressing many of the errors expressed in their literature and declaring to them the Lord Jesus Christ.

I gave them my paper, asking Mark to translate it for them. They paid little, if any, attention to it, partially because they didn’t seem to recognize the implications of working for an organization they knew little of and didn’t really care to know.

I wondered if they wouldn’t experience wrath from the Lord for their association with an organization that was plainly religious and anti-Christ. They were warned, they would suffer, and we would see it happen.

Particle - Realization I Was Not Standing with Marilyn

After the battle with Gene and Les, and Marilyn’s standing with me in it, I realized I hadn’t been much of a support and protector on her behalf throughout our marriage. I was incapable; it was foreign to me; I was oblivious to such a thing. We had always talked of how she never stood with me, and while that may have been true, I was also never there for her, or for anyone else for that matter. She was often on her own in battles and struggles. I hoped I would be far more considerate and dutiful to her in that respect.

Particle - More Tormenting Dreams

For a number of weeks, I’d been having dreams of working at [the Bay](#) or going back to work there - a nightmare. It’s peculiar how we can have these kinds of dreams and somehow not fully realize it consciously. But as I was becoming aware of them, I asked the Lord to remove them, encouraged by past experience that my awareness of them was a token that they were on the way out.

Particle - A Sparrow Rebukes Me

I don’t recall when this happened, but it happened. I was putting out the daily birdfeed and finding close to 200 house sparrows coming and devouring it. On cold days, I could go through as much as 4 kg of birdseed (8 or 9 lbs.) every day. Not only were the house sparrows voraciously feeding, they

were chasing away more timid varieties of birds, like chickadees, nuthatches, and a few species of real sparrows.

I decided to take my BB gun and shoot some house sparrows to discourage them from taking over the tray feeders - a silly thought, I know. So I shot one, it landed on the gravel just below a little bush, and I went to fetch and dispose of it.

As I reached down to pick up the lifeless body, a real sparrow sat almost directly above it on a branch of that bush facing me (I don't recall what variety it was). How strange that was! Normally, it would have been long gone at my approach, but no, it sat there quiet and sad, not moving, wiping its bill on the branch, presumably from feeding. I wasn't more than three or four feet from it, and the bleeding body of the dead house sparrow was almost directly below it.

Then it spoke. "Why did you do that? You put out the feed for them (house sparrows), they trust and depend on you for the food, and then you kill them. Why? Why did you do that?"

It didn't scold; it was just sad, almost crying. There was nothing wrong with it otherwise. Having spoken, it flew away. I was shocked and so ashamed. I picked up the body of the house sparrow and took it away. I never shot another sparrow since, and to this day, my treachery towards those birds has bothered me.

Did the bird speak to me in an audible voice? No, but it spoke loud and clear by its spirit, or God spoke by it, even as an ass spoke and rebuked Balaam, though in that case, it **was** an audible voice. I confessed my fault to God, sorrowfully apologized, and determined I would never do such a thing again.

Particle - Idolatry Comes in Good Forms

Isn't it true that much idolatry focuses on certain positive attributes that can be found in God? Look at Shinji Shumeikai, for example. They praise the virtues of honesty, sincerity, and truth and promote organic agriculture.

Many professing faith in Christ worship the Bible and even worship **worship itself**, both of which are good in themselves.

Perhaps the most deceptive of all is to worship the historical Christ, thus missing out on the Living, Present Christ, which is what true worship of God is all about. Idolatry can be deceptive and insidious.

Particle - Nobody Is Perfect

How many times have we heard, "Nobody's perfect!"? But who are they that say so? That's the question. And here's the answer: It's said by those who don't recognize Jesus Christ for Who He is, the Present Savior from imperfection. One of the problems is that the nature and application of perfection are misunderstood. There is no perfection of the flesh. It is a moot point to say, concerning the flesh, "Nobody is perfect and never will be in this life." That's like saying, "Pigs don't fly and never will." Perfection in Christ has nothing to do with the carnal man, who resents the very thought of it.

The apostle John wrote:

“Everyone who has been born of God does not commit sin, because His seed remains in him, and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God” (1 John 3:9 MKJV).

What is John saying? Almost anyone professing faith in Christ and reading the Bible will insist that we are all sinners who cannot help but sin and that we never will stop sinning until after this life. They quote the “giant” Christian, the apostle Paul, who said, **“I am the chiefest of sinners,”** and use him as an apparently ideal excuse for their own sins.

Never mind that they don’t try to reach the height of virtue that Paul tried to achieve; never mind that he was not going around hopping into bed with other men’s wives; never mind that he charged or solicited nothing for his ministry; never mind that he preached Christ openly and forcefully everywhere he went, literally laying down his life that we might have the Truth. They ignore all those things, take some isolated words, and distort their meaning to justify their wickedness.

The Lord revealed to me that the perfection of which Paul, John, and God speak are in the inner man, in his spirit and motive. That man is one in Christ, is like Christ, and will not, indeed, cannot sin. As we believe and obey, we grow. As we grow, the spiritual man takes control and Christ is finally manifest.

Perfection in this world is not in the flesh and never will be until the resurrection of the body. Perfection is in the motive, which motive is formed in Christ, beginning at the new birth. Those who say, as an excuse or self-justification, “Nobody’s perfect,” have not known the Lord or are, in the very least, in deep need of correction.

Particle - Women Rule Their Husbands

Months before, the Lord gave me the revelation that it has been women and not men who have reigned, the ordained order being reversed since the beginning of time because of what is known as the “original sin.” Today, in the end of times, feminism is in fruition and is the crowning glory of authority usurped, of rebellion at the roots - in family and general society.

Marilyn was running the farm while I was at home. Why was this? Was it good? Ultimately, I say it was not. I believe that’s the way it was for now because the Lord was teaching us personally this truth of order and authority, which applied to the whole world. Why was He doing so? Upon us was laid the responsibility to teach others in this Day of the Lord, in which all is coming to a climax.

If we were honest with ourselves, we’d look and see that it’s rare, especially in “Christian” circles, that men are the head. Almost invariably, women wield their subtle powers (often not subtle at all) and run the household. If they’re the weaker vessel, as the Bible says, it is in body only, not in mind and spirit. Even in body, while they’re unable, on average, to exert strength equal to men, they’re often able to endure pain and hardship unlike men.

But when I see working women, particularly in business, I see hardness. It is etched on their faces and expressed in their countenances, spirits, and attitudes. I see them hurting. I saw this with Marilyn.

Particle - Why All-Black or All-White?

Les Mills once asked me, “Why do you have to be all right or all wrong? Why can’t there be a mixture? None of us is perfect; we’re all learning. There’s something wrong with you when you can’t be wrong on some things unless you’re all wrong.”

Perhaps Les was right that there was something wrong with me, for who has heard of any man being all right? We've had tyrants like popes and some national leaders like Hitler, Mussolini, and Mao Tse Tung claiming to be all right, only to find they were crazed, power-hungry souls seeking their own glory and being horribly wrong. Do we not know? Haven't we learned that Jesus is the Only One Who, as a man, was all right? And even He, the Bible says, learned obedience by the things He suffered.

But is there not an all-rightness in the Lord by virtue of a calling on one's life in Christ, such as He placed upon me? He even called me His Sabbath, which is represented by the number seven, which stands for completeness. How is one complete without perfection or perfect without completion? If we speak of completeness, aren't we speaking of His work and not ours? If He has completed His work, is it not perfect? My [first dream](#) from God showed me walking with the Lord in perfection, and Lois had several visions of me as a perfected spiritual man.

Yes, I am a man and not God, with infirmities and with a record of having failure, loss, self-service, bitterness, and more. That is the carnal man, the first Adam. But the Lord has done a work, creating a Sabbath of me, wherein He manifests Himself to the world. It is the Day of the Lord in me, and in the day of His wrath and judgment, ***there is no wrong***, as unpleasant and disagreeable as this may seem to the earthy men of sin, who have usurped His world in His Name.

Yet it appears there is and must be wrong (even as He appeared to be born from fornication) because He comes with clouds, as a thief, without recognition or comprehension. He comes to judge, and the son of perdition can't stand in the judgment, no matter how righteous or innocent he deems himself to be.

The man of sin is indignant when confronted and exposed. After all, hasn't he been "godly"? Has he not prophesied, cast out devils, taught in the streets, helped many, done many great and wonderful works, even miracles? Has he not received and imparted many revelations to others? Has he not preached the Word of God and sown the seed far and wide? Has he not "converted souls to Christ"? Has he not sacrificed his worldly goods, time, energies, even his family and very life for God?

How dare anyone even suspect, never mind question or suggest, least of all assert, that the first Adam, the man of sin, is wicked and unacceptable to God?

I'm sent of the Lord, having been prepared of Him, to execute His judgment on the man of sin in all in this day. I sit with the Lord on the throne, wielding His rod and scepter. The judgment stands and no man can overturn or escape it. I am all right in Him, not of myself at all, but all in Him.

I must be faithful to Him and make known to the religious in no uncertain terms that unless their righteousness exceeds that of the Pharisees, they will in no way enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

Particle - Acceptance the Victory

In the night of January 22-23, 1999, I received a message from the Lord, a realization of a great truth to bring any through who believe and walk in this revelation:

If we accept our lot in life, no matter what it is, we have victory; we have reached that long-sought-after summit. While we envy others or emulate them, while we long for fame or anything we don't have, other than the Lord, we fail. "Acceptance with Joy" was one of Hannah Hurnard's

flowers, as related in *Hind's Feet in High Places*. From this revelation, which I received while praying for Sean, I came to write [Acceptance](#).

Particle - Taking Myself Seriously

It's said we can take ourselves too seriously. How seriously must I take myself? By human nature, I didn't seem to have taken myself seriously. I was the clown, the drunk swinging from chandeliers, the one with all the jokes, full of every kind of foolishness. But when Jesus Christ began to take possession of me, having laid down His life to do so, I became serious - very serious.

"You know what, Victor? I don't like the new you!" my sister contemptuously exclaimed not long after the Lord's radical act of mercy on me. I've been the new "serious me" ever since.

I see where many take themselves seriously and are ridiculed for it. Comedians have a heyday with this particular foible in people. Why's that? Some tend to have an exaggerated sense of importance and virtue. We get turned off by those who think too highly of themselves.

But God and the things of God are to be taken perfectly seriously. While I recognize I have no righteousness of my own, my seriousness is about Him. I dare not be light about Him or His calling on my life.

The vast majority of people don't have a clue about the true faith of God. They don't believe such a thing is true or possible. They see Christianity as merely an opinion, social stance, philosophy, religious choice, church or denominational membership, or a noble set of values at best. They really don't believe or comprehend faith as taking up the cross of Christ - a matter of life and death.

Did the prophets of God take themselves seriously? How about Moses, Elijah, Jeremiah, Isaiah, and John the Baptist? Was Moses a happy-go-lucky kind of guy? Was John a joker? Was Paul the life of the party? Their lives were on the line at all times! Did the apostles take themselves seriously? They all died performing their duty to the One Who died for them.

Did they give people a good laugh as they were being stoned to death or burned at the stake? How about Jesus, our Supreme Example? How seriously did He take Himself? How about *dead* seriously? As with the Master, so with the disciple, who's no greater than his Master.

Charlatans - unregenerate, light, popular, worldly people - tell me I take myself too seriously. Devils tell me I take myself too seriously. People who have no idea of the gravity of life and of God's will don't take Him seriously.

"I am hurting! I am hurting!" He [cried](#) in March 1976, calling on me to turn away from the ways and pleasures of those who thought they ought not to take themselves too seriously.

Here is what the apostle Peter said of this matter of seriousness:

"Be sensible and vigilant, because your adversary the Devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking someone he may devour; whom firmly resist in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions in the world are being completed in your brotherhood" (1 Peter 5:8-9 MKJV).

It's Satan who doesn't want us to take ourselves seriously with God. Why so? His desire is to destroy us.

I take myself seriously, but I must confess I haven't done so as I ought. I've fought with unbelief and have lost many battles with it over the years, but by the grace of God, I will win the war, having taken God's will and my calling very seriously. Can one ever be too serious about that?

Particle - Ordeal Soon to End

About January 26, 1999, I received of the Lord that the ordeal that had gone on for over two years would soon come to an end.

Marilyn was very offended with me on the morning of the 28th. Lois was so insecure - always on everybody's case over every little thing. She was so fearful. No wonder we'd said, "She loves nobody; she has no sympathy or feeling." Last night, I had to deal with yet another of very frequent squabbles at the farm. I felt that the Lord was very grieved with the way all were conducting themselves. Given that they were supposed to be loving the Lord, their behavior was despicably shameful.

Particle - Vision: Devils' Delight at Harvest Haven - Harvest Hades?

In the night of February 8-9, 1999, it came to me that they at that farm were worshipping other gods, not the Lord. In a vision, I saw devils, the size of Jonathan (he was a small age 7), running around, having a heyday with the people there.

Particle - Marilyn Led and Ruled

There were many examples of Marilyn taking the lead with us:

- Marilyn [prophesied](#) that we fight the feedlot near Moon River in 1993. We did so and [won](#), as she prophesied.
- She urged me to [stay in the mutuals](#) when I thought the Lord was telling me otherwise. In those, we bled profusely and I was sorely chastened, but came through for the better.
- She was adamant that Cathie [remain out](#) when she tried to return to the farm.
- She insisted that Archie [must go](#), and Archie was exposed.
- She was adamant that Paul and Kerri should leave.
- She was running the farm.
- She [addressed](#) Bob Fife in his error when the rest of us remained silent.
- She [stood up](#) to Les and Gene when they came to attack me.
- I had the [vision](#) decades ago of her guiding me.
- I had the [vision](#) of her on a throne.
- All were looking to her and not to me for leadership at the farm.

Particle - Tormenting Bay Dreams Depart

It was revealed to me that I needed to confess a carnal, arrogant, domineering, worldly business spirit, attitude, and conduct, which I brought with me from the executive business world of [the Bay](#) decades before (not that the Bay was to blame). This confession paved the way for removing the [tormenting dreams](#) of going back and working there.

Often, wrongful reactions of fear and negative attitudes toward our circumstances spawn our nightmares and spiritual wounds.

Particle - Tormenting Dreams of Confusion in City Streets

I was also having dreams of trying to make my way through city streets with dead ends and detours, warehouses full of things like grain, junk, boxes, and so forth. Usually in the dark of night, I desperately searched for a way through or across.

I didn't know where I was going or why. I was just trying to make it through. Often, street hoodlums waited to beat, rob, or prevent me from my destination. It was horrible confusion.

I saw Dauphin in many of them, and they seemed to be related to my newspaper delivery days and to the hospital where my parents worked and where I worked on summer holidays. I asked the Lord to cleanse me of these dreams. I thought they were all permanently gone when they [ceased in 1989](#).

Particle - Thou Shalt Not Be Negative

"You're so negative," some have said to me, particularly Barney Knelsen, Les Mills, and Gene Knorr. They refer to Paul's words:

"Finally, my brothers, whatever things are true, whatever things are honest, whatever things are right, whatever things are pure, whatever things are lovely, whatever things are of good report; if there is any virtue and if there is any praise, think on these things" (Philippians 4:8 MKJV).

But the negative always and necessarily comes before the positive, sorrow before joy, darkness before light, night before day, labor before pay, pain before birth, death before resurrection, the cross before the crown, vanity before glory, battle before victory, submission before rulership, responsibility before authority, discipline before stewardship, stewardship before rulership, and apprenticeship before mastery.

Consider that it was in the iron furnace of bondage and oppression in Egypt that God formed the nation Israel. It was by the terrible Nazi persecution and through the Holocaust that He raised up the born-again nation of Israel in this century. Man's history began with his Fall, followed by death, sorrow, and suffering all these millennia. After that, in due time, come resurrection, life, and fulfillment. That's the way it is.

Those who refuse to acknowledge the negative are stunted in their growth and development; they fear reality, though they think themselves to be the most enlightened and well adjusted. The wicked refuse to pay the price. They choose the uppermost seats in gatherings, the honor and glory, being proud and not humble, wanting to *be* right rather than to *do* right.

Particle - The Webbers, Our New Neighbors

On January 31, 1999, as I escorted Jonathan to the playground, I met Leanne (23 or 24) and her younger brother, Jeff, who was 7. Their mother had left their father, Peter, for a man she had met on the net.

I found it contemptible that a woman would leave three children (plus an older boy) and a husband for an internet liaison. The whole family was traumatized, all but the woman, whom we later met, along with her boyfriend, Chuck. At times I was tempted to say something, but it didn't seem to be my business.

We got to visiting with their father, Peter. I discovered in years to come that Peter was about my age, and Jeff was Jonathan's age. Peter's birthdate was September 22nd, Jonathan's birthdate, and Jeff's was April 1st, my birthdate! When I learned of this remarkable coincidence, I couldn't help but feel God had some purpose in it all. What the purpose was, we never did learn.

Particle - Willing to Be the Anti-Christ

I recall once saying to the Lord that I wanted His perfect will so much that if it were His will that I be the anti-Christ, so be it. I didn't realize what I was saying and didn't know why I said it, but I did. Where did such a thought come from?

On the night of February 1-2, I realized the anti-Christ would have to steal, lie, kill, and destroy, standing against all good. I thought, "I'm willing to do *that*? No way! If God asks me to do it, I refuse." Would one refuse God? I would do so because, firstly, I didn't believe He would want or ask any such thing of me, but, secondly, if He *did* want it of me, I would still refuse. And I thought I was so spiritual, thinking I would do *anything* for Him, good *or* bad. No more.

I considered that because I was willing to do evil, people like [Bill Welton](#), [Glen Seeman](#), [Aleeyta Starre](#), Sean Fife, and many others did evil to me, intentionally and otherwise. Sowing destruction, the destroyer must reap destruction. Lord, no more; deliver us from evil.

Particle - Vision: Small Bird Led by Cord

In the night of February 4-5, 1999, I had a strange vision and didn't know what to make of it. I was leading a bird away by a cord that was about 8 feet long. The cord hung loose about the bird's neck. The bird was between the size of a sparrow and a robin. It couldn't fly; it could only walk or hop on the ground, and seemed a bit flustered.

Particle - Miyuki Responds

Miyuki called, asking for prayer to receive strength to quit her job. "I'm coming to Canada," she said, but she hadn't followed through in obedience to the Lord, Who directed her to immediately give notice of departure at her occupation.

It became evident she wasn't going by faith, but was trying to arrange for a replacement for her income security before stepping out. This, according to our experience, is not the way the Lord works, and I told her so. He doesn't honor our "insurance policies." Indeed, He hates them because they are His unwarranted competitors. We are to trust Him though we have no reasonable explanation or proof of any kind for the feasibility of His direction.

Was it Abraham or God who reserved and provided a ram as a substitute for Isaac?

I wasn't at peace with Miyuki and came to the conclusion she didn't have the faith to obey. She had tried to explain her intentions to unbelievers in order to pacify her employer, mother, and aunt, who would be directly affected by her actions. As they objected, she believed them and not

the Lord, because their objections and thoughts “made sense,” while God’s direction apparently made no sense at all.

Was Miyuki not that bird? Hadn’t I been compelling her to follow me in faith? Was not the cord a long one, indicating we were a long distance apart? Was she not unable to fly?

Particle - We in Christ Are the Lord

When Jesus came, He was so identified with the Father and one with Him that an observer worshipping in spirit and truth could only say that Jesus was God (John 14:6-11). And He said that as the Father sent Him, so He sends us:

“Then Jesus said to them again, ‘Peace to you. As My Father has sent Me, even so I send you’” (John 20:21 MKJV).

Therefore, does it not follow that as He was recognized as God in the flesh by those who believed, people should be able to recognize His saints as Him in the flesh? Are we not His Body, as the Scriptures declare? We are as Him on earth.

“Together you are the Body of Christ. Each one of you is part of His Body” (1 Corinthians 12:27 CEV).

We must be so identified with Jesus and be so one with Him that any worshipper of God in spirit and truth could only say that we are Jesus. The Father extends Himself in and by His Son and the Son extends Himself in and by us, and therefore we’re an expression and extension of the Father (John 17:21-23). Sons become as their father, having the same spirit, nature, power, attitude, ambition, and even appearance. However, only those of God could possess discernment to witness the spiritual reality.

“By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God; and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the antichrist you heard is coming, and even now is already in the world” (1 John 4:2-3 MKJV).

Particle - Do Believers Tell Other Believers What To Do?

Our adversaries come criticizing us of controlling others. But I perceive that if I didn’t control my son, for example, he would leave his clothes and toys laying around; he would eat, go to bed, rise, and generally do as he pleased. We parents would suffer the consequences, as many do, even to the death at the hands of their own untrained, undisciplined children, which we have witnessed firsthand. It happens.

If we don’t control the lawless and unlearned, they will control us. “It’s us or them.” Shall we establish order or permit disorder? Which is of God?

When the lawless say, “You shall not control,” they’re saying, “We insist that **we** control how you conduct yourself.” They don’t question control *per se*, only who does the controlling and the methods used.

“You’re not going to tell **me** what to do” is the manifesto of devils, but they don’t hesitate for a moment to exercise control over others.

Didn't Jesus Christ, the Servant of mankind, tell His disciples what to do? He constantly did so and never did they tell Him, their Master, what to do, unless they were wrong. And if they were wrong, they wouldn't be His "disciples" (disciplined ones), would they?

Furthermore, the issue of control isn't in the act, but in the motive. Those with desire to do what is right have no problem doing as they're told or telling others what to do for the right reasons and with right motive and spirit. Order is the order of the day. God is not a God of confusion, but of order. Order requires law, law requires implementation, and implementation requires communication.

To be effective, commandments must have teeth. "Don't tell me what to do," gives the lawless one his way if the commander stops at the rebel refusal, hence, the absolute need for control if there is to be order.

But comes the Day of Perfection when all will be doing and speaking right because they **WANT** to.

Particle - Jonathan's Vision: Cowboy on a Wooden Horse

On February 11, 1999, while in prayer before supper at the farm, Jonathan saw a cowboy on an animated wooden horse galloping across a dry desolate terrain, desert-like, except that it had dead trees all around, with trunks pointing upward. The cowboy was twirling a lasso overhead and singing, "Yi yo, yi yo," or something to that effect. Jonathan felt that Sean was that cowboy.

Particle - Marilyn's Vision: An Open Book

On February 13th, Marilyn had a vision that those in our community were to be an open book to all - nothing hidden.

I received that they were to be in constant prayer and confession of sin, and the Lord would do what needed to be done, fighting their battles, providing, guiding - everything.

On February 14th, Marilyn wanted the three of us to talk. Sean was in his usual state of troubled spirit, and this time I declined Marilyn's request because I just didn't feel like listening to their expressions of feelings for each other.

Particle - Lois' Vision: Marilyn and I Amicably Divide

On February 14th, Lois had a vision wherein she saw Marilyn and me walking down a road at a fast pace, with determination, together, yet with space between us, and then we walked away from one another in opposite directions, smiling at each other; I went left and she went right. When separating, we were both happy.

Particle - Jason Manifests His Choice

We had been in touch with Jason Benson on a rather regular basis, hoping we could be there for him. In a phone call or letter, he let us know that he chose Lee as a cellmate at Drumheller Penitentiary. Lee was his friend and partner in crime who had helped Jason kill his father. Seeing he made his choice, which indicated to us his propensity towards evil, we decided there was no more to say or do with him for the time and let him know so. Contact was terminated.

Then his colors came out and he wrote a highly vicious letter to his mother, accusing her of all manner of evil out of his imaginations and bitterness. All his smiles and apparent attentiveness to what we were saying were pretense.

Particle - Jonathan's Prophecy: One Should Not Be There

On February 18th at 10:50 AM, Jonathan came to me, saying, "I just had a prophecy, I think. *'There's one that shouldn't be there.'*" He didn't know what it was all about.

Particle - Vision: Sword Run through Me

In February of 1999, I had a vision wherein I saw that I had a sword run through the center of my body, sticking out the back. It had been there all my life, it seemed, perhaps particularly my Christian life... not sure. It was soon to be withdrawn and my pain would be gone. The end of death? The end of the forces of Satan buffeting me? My marriage?

It was fulfilled, because the sword and pain are now gone.

Particle - Is God with Me or Not?

To my shame, there's no question I've asked far too frequently, "Is God with me or not?" The Israelites asked that question of unbelief and were immediately attacked by the Amalekites (Exodus 17:7-8). I've been forced to do battle with the Amalekites countless times. That is no question for any Christian pilgrim to be entertaining unless he wants to tangle with the forces of darkness.

I've asked this question particularly when having to say hard things to people, the most recent ones being the Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, and Knelsens. "Is it Christian of me to talk this way? Is this love? They certainly don't think so. Would Jesus do this? Am I not judging unrighteously? Am I seeing right, and even if I am, should I be saying anything? Don't I have plenty of fault myself?" Those are all forms of the question, "Is God with me or not?"

Now I said, "Let others question whether the Lord is with *them*, especially when I've said He isn't." The Lord told me He would show me His people through His eyes and He *has*. What a horribly ugly sight! No wonder Jesus is described by Isaiah as a man of sorrows, acquainted with grief. Man's condition grieves Him deeply. Yet they think they're spiritually beautiful, and that makes them so much uglier. I've had to tell them so, but they don't believe me and refuse to consider.

Suffering their angry reactions to what I say, and believing their denials of guilt, has frequently brought me doubts, but I've decided to believe God rather than men. Then I have peace, despite what I see.

Particle - I See What I See

The Lord has told me to be what I am and to believe what I see. I ought not pretend I don't see or feel these things. I know I now desire goodness, fairness, prosperity, peace, and joy for those people. I know they're in wickedness. And, if I could only remember how blind I once was to people, I must consider that I see what I see only because the Lord has given me grace to see. As He said, *"I am hurting! I am hurting! I will show you My people through My eyes!"* It's a painful thing to witness indeed, but I must see it and tell it like it is.

Particle - Unveiling the True Nature and Identity of the Enemy

Still troubled by the way I wrote to those people, I spent time seeking the Lord. He brought this forth to me:

“With you I can attack a *line of soldiers*. With my God I can break through barricades. God’s way is perfect! The promise of the LORD has proven to be true. He is a shield to all those who take refuge in Him” (Psalms 18:29-30 GW).

I also recalled: **“He teaches my hands to war, so that a bow of bronze is bent by my arms” (Psalms 18:34 MKJV).**

With those words, I was led to: **“Blessed be the Lord my God, Who teaches my hands to fight, and my fingers to war” (Psalms 144:1 DRB).**

“Put out Your hand from on high; make me free, take me safely out of the great waters, and out of the hands of *strange men*, in whose mouths are false words, and whose right hand is a right hand of deceit” (Psalms 144:7-8 BBE).

Strong’s Concordance defines the word “strange” in verse 7:

H5236 - foreign, heathendom, alien

H5234 - to scrutinize, look intently at (with recognition implied), to acknowledge, be acquainted with, care for, respect, revere, or (with suspicion implied), to disregard, ignore, be strange toward, reject, resign, dissimulate....

I fought these people in [my vision](#) with my hands; I was full of strength and I found them strange, having to scrutinize them.

A “troop” or “line of soldiers,” as the *God’s Word* translation puts it in 18:29, is a group of armed persons in some kind of order or formation. In the vision, I had to run through the formation of a line of soldiers.

Yes, the Lord showed me with whom I was dealing and I had nothing to regret whatsoever. The vision was fulfilled to His honor, glory, and praise. It came to me that those six were the children of Bosor (Moabitish origin - of incest or illegitimate origin).

H2114 - to turn aside (as in 2 Peter 2), to be a foreigner, strange, profane, specifically to commit adultery.

“...which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness...” (2 Peter 2:15 KJV)

Adulterers and adulteresses they were, with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, having a form of godliness but denying His Resurrection Power.

Particle - Lois’ Vision: Rulership on the Fourth Level

Around February 25, 1999, Lois had a vision of me sitting on our loveseat. The Lord said, *"Come, it's time."* My reaction was, "So quick? That's it? But there are things left undone!" It didn't matter... those things didn't matter.

A flood of thoughts of understanding began to come to me. I was taken to one level where there were many people. *"Not here... higher,"* I was told.

Coming to a second level, with fewer people, I was told the same.

At a third level with very few, again, I was told the same, until I was brought to a fourth level where there were no people, but a throne on which I was to sit and rule. I had understanding of many things that caused me to realize why things were, how and what they were, and that all was designed and ordained.

Without understanding, one would fight and resist these things or try to change them somehow. The levels were levels of understanding, but also of authority. They were also dimensions. The fourth was imminent.

Particle - Justice with Archie

Archie had many grievances with me. I considered that I had been cruel and merciless to him and his family, without consideration or understanding, as with all people, albeit unintentionally. I decided that I wanted to address those issues as much as I was able.

When I called to get Archie's fax number, he answered. I felt and believed I wouldn't be able to talk to him directly, so I simply asked him if he was willing to accept a fax from me right away. He consented. My faxed letter to him on the 26th of February 1999:

Archie, I know that you have grievances with me, legitimate or not. I'd like to know what they are, if there are any legitimate ones, and to address them if you're willing.

Let me know what they are and what I could do about them to your satisfaction, reasonable, that is, if possible.

If you mentioned any of them before and got nowhere, try now and I will consider from there what to do. Please be clear and specific. I'm not asking you for anything else at this point. Victor

It was some time before I heard back from him.

Particle - A Remarkable Temptation

There were several things I found quite desirable of the Mills and the Knorrs. For years, I had been longing for fellowship with married couples, as we were married. All our Christian years, we hadn't had that privilege. We were lonely that way.

I desired that we could have fellowship with more people our age, which the Knorrs and Mills were.

I appreciated that the Knorrs and Mills were regular, down-to-earth, country-type folk. I had always had a liking and comfortability with such.

They had skills I appreciated and which I knew we could use - some very much so.

Gene was a carpenter, and a good one at that.

Les was a cattleman; we had cattle he could advise us about; we knew so little.

Vicky was a wildlife artist and a very good one, I was told. I was hoping to receive art from her.

Penny played the guitar; it was good to have someone else into music.

They also had some inclination toward organic foods.

Doctrinally, these people believed in the restitution of all things, an important doctrine but not a common one among believers. They believed in the baptism of the Holy Spirit and the gifts, another uncommon element among evangelicals.

They had brought us writings of some prominent Christian authors like Preston Eby and others. They even brought me Eby's writing, "The Man of Sin," which was precisely in agreement with what the Lord was revealing to me at that time - a marvelous coincidence.

They took an interest in what I had to say and were eager to talk about the things of God and revelation from Him. They looked forward to the fulfillment of the Feast of Tabernacles, a matter the Lord was also impressing upon me at that time.

They were out of the church systems - again, a precious commonality to be desired.

They were seeking fellowship, as were we, and they seemed to understand some of my trial with Marilyn and Sean. Personality-wise, I very much appreciated, indeed enjoyed, every one of them, even the Ogdens and Barny Knelsen. And there were several of them, leading me to believe that the Lord was finally breaking things open for us.

It seemed like it could have been a dream come true. There was so very much desirable with them for me. I've little doubt many people would have been willing to sacrifice or compromise much for such benefits.

Yet, I instinctively knew I had to recognize their spiritual conditions and forsake their tempting benefits. I had to trash my desires and speak for their sakes, though I also instinctively knew (as well as by experience) that they would walk away from me, hating what I would say. I was hoping it would be different with them than with so many others, but I resigned myself to the worst.

Particle - It Is Done

March 1, 1999 had now come. It was **Day 888** from the day of Marilyn's [prophecy](#) on September 24, 1996. On **Day 666**, Sean visited me in my home and I labored with him on the prophecy, trying to tell him that I wouldn't be dying and that what he and Marilyn were doing was wrong. He didn't believe me. On **Day 777**, which was **November 10th**, I was finished with the prophecy, though I recognized it wasn't yet quite finished with me.

On March 2nd, I couldn't shake what I felt, heard, and found within, that the Lord's work was finished, though I had willingly accepted and believed all that was contrary to what I felt within. I

was to wait on the Lord only, not on death or on prophecy fulfillment or on sensational change within or without.

The Lord brought the synagogue of Satan, the battle raged, and now they were gone. We were going from mission to mission, duty to duty, glory to glory, step by step.

I kept hearing, *“What are you waiting for? It’s done! Believe! Get on with life. Do whatever is required of you, of whatever nature.”*

When I shared this with Marilyn, she was sorely distressed, agitated, frustrated, offended, and angry. Why did I even bother to tell her these things?

END OF PART VII

COMING NEXT: [PART VIII - DAY 888 TO VICTORY](#)

Believe it - the next Part contains marvelous events you’re sure to appreciate.